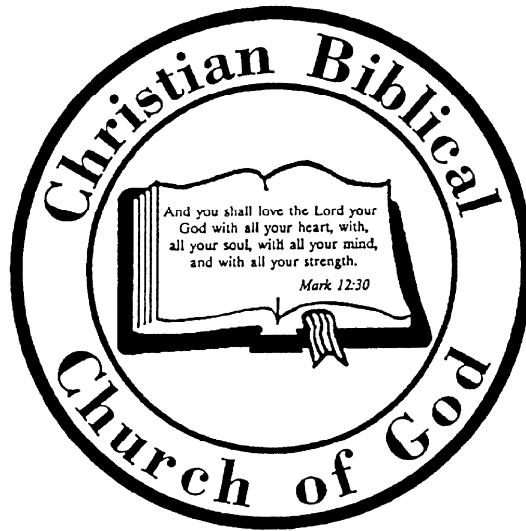


# Prophecies of Jesus In the Old Testament



**Transcript Book**

By Fred R. Coulter

© 2018  
Fred R. Coulter  
Christian Biblical Church of God  
P. O. Box 1442  
Hollister, California 95024-1442

*All rights reserved. Except for brief excerpts for review purposes, no part of this publication may be reproduced or used in any form or by any means without the written permission of the copyright owner. This includes electronic and mechanical photocopying or recording, as well as the use of information storage and retrieval systems.*

# DOCUMENT *of* COMPLETION

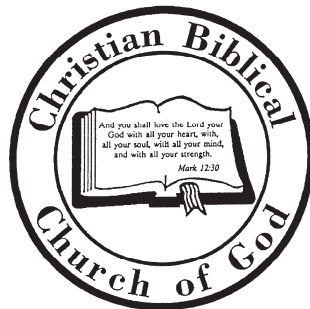
THIS ACKNOWLEDGES THAT, I



HAVE SUCCESSFULLY COMPLETED

## Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament

Series of 12 sermons by Fred R. Coulter



\_\_\_\_\_  
Signature

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date

- |  |                      |
|--|----------------------|
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament I    | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament II   | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament III  | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament IV   | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament V    | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VI   | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VII  | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VIII | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament IX   | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament X    | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament XI   | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament XII  | Date completed _____ |

# Contents

## Booklet

	PAGE
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament I – From Adam to Abraham -----	1 – 11
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament II – The “Seed”/Line of Christ -----	12– 22
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament III – In the Law & the Prophets ---	23 – 33
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament IV – Attributes of Christ & First and Second Coming -----	34 – 44
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament V – Suffering Servant/ Servant Sacrifice-----	45 – 57
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VI – Suffering and Sacrifice of Christ -----	58 – 68
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VII – First and Second Coming of Christ (Zechariah 11) -----	69 – 80
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VIII – The Prophets & Writings ---	81 – 91
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament IX – In the Psalms & Fulfillments in the New Testament #1 -----	92–101
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament X – In the Psalms & Fulfillments in the New Testament #2 -----	102–112
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament XI – Prophecies of Jesus and the Law – Psalms 119 -----	113–123
Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament XII – Three Prophetic Periods Of Daniel 9 – Covenant of Covenants-----	124–135

## **Compact Disc**

*[When included]*

**Tracks 1 & 2 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament I**

**Tracks 3 & 4 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament II**

**Tracks 5 & 6 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament III**

**Tracks 7 & 8 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament IV**

**Tracks 9 & 10 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament V**

**Tracks 11 & 12 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VI**

**Tracks 13 & 14 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VII**

**Tracks 15 & 16 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VIII**

**Tracks 17 & 18 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament IX**

**Tracks 19 & 20 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament X**

**Tracks 21 & 22 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament XI**

**Tracks 23 & 24 Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament XII**

# **Prophecies of Jesus Christ in the Old Testament**

## **Foreword**

This transcript book is a compilation of sermons given by a minister of Jesus Christ for over fifty years, Mr. Fred R. Coulter. In this book you will find revealed that God determined what events were to occur regarding the coming of the Messiah and then bringing these events to pass at their appointed time. Hundreds of years, in many of the prophecies found regarding the coming of Jesus Christ as Savior of mankind, passed between the prophecies being written and then being fulfilled as prophesied. The reader will appreciate the love and seeing that God is indeed true to His every word.

The first transcript book, “Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament I – From Adam to Abraham,” shows that the Old Testament and the New Testament are both incomplete without the other. The Old Testament is the physical prophetic whereas the New Testament is the spiritual fulfillment. Also noted is that Adam and Eve, after their sin in the Garden of Eden, continued to have a close relationship with God.

The second transcript book, “Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament II – The ‘Seed’ / Line of Christ”, brings out details not readily noticed in many of the prophecies referring to Jesus Christ that are found in the Old Testament. Shown is the fact that the prophets told about the times and the circumstances about Jesus Christ whereas David was inspired to bring more of the thoughts of Christ. Also shown is that the greatest thing of Abraham’s life was that Abraham obeyed the voice of God. Details are given as to how the maladiictory oath taken by God in Genesis chapter 15 is related to the death of Jesus Christ.

The third transcript book, “Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament III – In the Law and the Prophets”, reveals that the Jewish religion is more pagan than the Catholics, but the Jews have retained the knowledge of the Holy Days. Shown also is that if one understands the Scriptures, then God has opened one’s mind to understand them. Without the mind being opened to understanding the prophecies of Christ in the Law of Moses and in the Prophets and in the Psalms, an individual cannot understand them.

The fourth transcript book. “Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament IV – Attributes of Christ and First and Second Coming,” shows that the prophecy in Isaiah 7 had both an immediate fulfillment and a future fulfillment. Noted is the reason why, in New Testament times, the rabbis no longer are the leading authorities of the Word of God in the world. Additionally, shown is that New Testament Christians need Christ in them and must accept His rule in their lives, and must be under the government of God. People may set themselves under ministers, but they are not under the government of God. Christ is the Head of all. Also taught is that one can never please

critical human nature. Both John the Baptist and Jesus Christ were condemned by people without God's Spirit.

The fifth sermon transcript, "Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament V – Suffering Servant / Servant Sacrifice," covers in depth the suffering and the sacrifice of Jesus Christ. Brought out is proof that the New Testament is the fulfillment of the prophecies in the Old Testament. Another item that is covered is how thousands of laws were created that make up Judaism today. Many of these man made laws have nothing to do with the Law of God. It has been said that many of these added laws, as nonsensical as they are, would seem to have come from the mind of an insane person – not the mind of God.

The sixth sermon transcript, "Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VI – Suffering and Sacrifice of Christ," covers more of what was written in the Old Testament regarding the birth and death of Jesus Christ. It is mentioned that a thing to keep in mind is that God does not want the Church run by committee or dictatorship. God wants it run with God as the Head! Also brought out is that the physical healing of the body comes from the beatings, the stripes, that were inflicted upon Christ's physical body. The spiritual healing comes with a person receiving the Holy Spirit. Covered also is the truth that keeping the commandments cannot be a substitute for the sacrifice of Christ because commandments cannot forgive sin.

The seventh sermon transcript, "Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VII – First and Second Coming of Christ," is an in-depth study regarding not only the circumstances around Jesus Christ coming in the flesh but it also covers the yet future return of Jesus Christ. In Christ's yet to happen return to the earth it is shown that He is returning to rule over all nations and all races of people as Lord and Master of the earth. Again, as mentioned in a previous transcript, the role of the Church and the ministry is spoken of. Any organization of the activities that are done for the Church are to serve the people. The people are not to serve the organization. There is not to be a political power structure in the form of a hierarchy that people can climb to exalt themselves.

The eighth sermon transcript, "Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VIII – The Prophets and Writings," is addressing in more detail prophecies in the Old Testament that proclaimed Jesus Christ as the Messiah. The focus here is upon those prophecies that are located in the books of the Prophets and the books of the Writings. The preaching, it is shown, of John the Baptist and Jesus Christ, was greater than what is found in the Law and the Prophets. This transcript also shows that Psalms 2:3 pinpoints where humanity is now in regard to God.

The ninth sermon transcript, "Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament IX – In the Psalms – Fulfillments in the New Testament #1," shows the many Old Testament prophecies that prophesied of Jesus Christ that were fulfilled in the New Testament. The details and their complete fulfillment by God show the power of God and the faithfulness of God's Word.

The tenth sermon transcript, "Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament X – In the Psalms and Fulfillments in the New Testament #2," is a continuation of the ninth sermon transcript. The reader will need to consider just how great that God is in that God can prophesy and bring what He says to pass hundreds and hundreds of years later—in fulfilling all of the prophecies.

The eleventh sermon transcript, “Prophecies of Jesus and the Law Psalms 119,” is focused upon what is written about Jesus in Psalm 119. A good many of the verses in Psalm 119 apply as far as how Christ would view the laws, commandments, the Word, the statutes and the judgements of God. Verse 119:2 is expounded upon. It is shown that the majority of mankind approach God in order to try to get something they want from God. But when people seek God with their whole heart, they are, in reality, seeking God. Through seeking God, with all your heart, God will take care of one. It is mentioned that answered prayer is more likely to occur when people are seeking God Himself and not something that He can provide.

The twelfth sermon transcript of this book, the last transcript, is “Three Prophetic Periods of Daniel 9—Covenant of Covenants.” It reveals that God sent a message using the archangel Gabriel to Daniel. This message showed that there were three segments of a seventy week period that would occur before Christ returned to the earth as King of Kings and Lord of Lords. Additionally, the agreement between God the Father and Jesus Christ the Son is discussed.

A special thanks goes to Bonnie Orswell, Laila Patterson and Nancy Spaller for producing the transcripts.



# Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament I

## From Adam to Abraham

Fred R. Coulter

How would the apostles preach concerning Christ from the Old Testament? This was the original question that I didn't clearly understand when I started the series in Hosea. {note sermon series: *Hosea Prophecy Series*.}

Let's begin this in the New Testament and this will give us a clue on what we need to do. The more that we study this and the more that we go through it, we're going to see that the Old Testament and the prophecies of Christ and the things that it teaches in the Old Testament lock in, just like a hand-in-glove, with the New Testament. *You cannot understand the New Testament without the Old and you cannot understand the Old Testament without the New.* God designed it that way—first the physical prophetic and then the spiritual fulfillment—Old Testament on the one hand, New Testament on the other hand.

I also have to mention that a good amount of the material that I am going to cover I was able to understand by listening to a Dr. Arnold Fruchtenbaum. He is a Jew who teaches Jews from the Old Testament about Jesus Christ. We're going to cover many more things in this than he had on his particular tapes. Nevertheless, I was able to learn quite a bit from him and it helped open my understanding even more, concerning the things in the Old Testament and concerning the prophecies of Jesus Christ. What we are going to see is that if you understand and know all the prophecies in the Old Testament, you can only come down to one virgin Mary, and one Messiah Jesus Christ—period. *There is none other!*

This is quite a description of our day today, 2-Timothy 3:13: "But wicked men and imposters shall become worse and worse, deceiving *others* and being deceived *themselves*." Isn't that true? Aren't we seeking God today? Even those who are deceiving are themselves being deceived.

Verse 14: "But *as for* you... [to Timothy] ...continue in the things that you did learn and were assured of, knowing from whom you have learned *them*." Who is the One Who is teaching us? *God the Father!*

Let's stop right here for something very important. I've mentioned this before but I need to mention it again because too often people want to follow a man. I state right here categorically, *I don't want anyone following me because I'm me!* If I can:

- teach you to follow Jesus Christ

- teach you the Words of God
- teach you to follow God

then, I'm doing what God wants every teacher and minister to do. When you understand that, you will realize that even though I may be a vessel of teaching, God the Father is the One Who is truly teaching you. Maybe you've never looked at it that way before.

- What happens when that one day comes and you begin to understand the Scriptures, where it never happened until that day?
- What happened?
- Why did that occur?

Something spiritual happened in your life that you did not recognize. Now, looking back on it, you will be able to recognize it.

John 6:44: "**No one can come to Me unless the Father, Who sent Me, draws him...**" I could probably bring a dozen different sermons starting right here at this point.

Is the Father going to make any mistakes? *No!* Even if you want to be the best that you can be and strive to God, *unless God calls you and opens your mind, you can't come to Christ*, "...**unless the Father, Who sent Me, draws him...**" We need to understand right from the very beginning that *it is God the Father Who has drawn you*. What credit can any man take for that? *None!*

"...and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, 'And they shall all be taught by God'" (vs 44-45) Who is really doing the teaching?

- if you have the Spirit of God
- if I preach the Word of God
- if when you're reading it and studying it and it does something to you Spiritually—mentally in your mind and heart

Who has done it? *God has done it!* If God inspires me to speak in a certain way or say a certain thing, do I get credit for it? *No, because I have nothing that I haven't received!* Very simple.

Can I learn from other people like Dr. Arnold Fruchtenbaum? *Yes, I can!* What he has, he didn't have it from himself. but received it. Being a Jew, looking from a Jew's perspective, how do you understand Christ in the Old Testament? That's all

he has to deal with in dealing with Jews who do not know Christ.

I can learn a great deal. Plus, add to it whatever else that I am also able to know and understand. So, we're going to get a full round understanding of Christ in the Old Testament and all the prophecies and things that it has to do with it.

Verse 45: "Therefore, everyone who has heard..."—*listen to*. Not to just hear the sound of the words, but to hear the sounds of the words and let them spiritually penetrate your heart and mind. That's what this has to do.

"...from the Father, and has learned, comes to Me" (vs 45).

When Paul was telling Timothy in 2-Timothy 3:14: "But *as for* you, continue in the things that you did learn and were assured of, knowing from whom you have learned *them*." I'm quite sure that Paul took no credit for what he thought and wrote, but that he understood it was from God.

Verse 15: "And that from a child you have known the Holy Writings..." That was mostly the Old Testament. Matthew was written by this time. 1<sup>st</sup>, 2<sup>nd</sup>-Thess. was written by this time. 1<sup>st</sup>, 2<sup>nd</sup>-Cor. was written and Gal. was written. As a matter of fact, 2-Tim. is probably the last book that Paul wrote. He knew that he was going to die. He knew that he had to finish and fulfill the Word of God, get it completed and send it on to the Apostle John to finish the canonizing of the New Testament.

The introduction to the New Testament—available online only: [cbcg.org](http://cbcg.org)—we have a history of the New Testament, a history of Erasmus and Tyndale and the history of the Scriptures in the Bible that show that the apostles knew they were writing, fulfilling and completing the Word of God.

It was finalized by the Apostle John and canonized by those with the Spirit of God. Do you think that God would leave the canonizing of the Scripture to pagan philosophers in 325 A.D. at the Council of Nicea to determine what the Word of God was? *No!* At the Council of Nicea the only thing they did was affirm that the New Testament was as they had received it. Who did they receive it from? *The apostles!*

"...you have known the Holy Writings, which are able to make you wise unto salvation through faith, which *is* in Christ Jesus" (vs 15). That's why you cannot have salvation in the Old Testament without Christ. That may sound like a contradictory statement, but it's not.

- Did Abraham have Christ? *Yes!*

- Did David have Christ? *Yes!*
- Did the prophets have Christ? *Yes!*

### ***He was the Lord God of the Old Testament!***

Let me pass on something very interesting. Arnold Fruchtenbaum knows the Hebrew according to the Levitical Scriptural Hebrew and he calls the Lord *Jehovah* all the way through. Let me just add this as we're going in. Yahweh comes from the Amoritic religion and Yahweh is the pronunciation of Yiddish Hebrew, which is different from Levitical Scriptural Hebrew. Tyndale, in his introduction to the Old Testament, has said that in his day they understood the proper accent of the vowel pointing of the Hebrew. That's why Tyndale wrote the name of God as *Jehovah*.

We're going to learn some powerful things as we go through this and I'm going to do a little bit of reading from *The Tyndale Bible: Old Testament* by William Tyndale.

Verse 16: "All Scripture... [Old Testament or New Testament] ...*is* God-breathed..." Therefore, the original Levitical Hebrew and the Koiné Greek that we have is called the *Textus Receptus*, and there's quite a history as to how that came about, which we will more fully understand.

Verse 16: "All Scripture *is* God-breathed... [Old Testament and New Testament] ...and **is profitable for doctrine**..." Doctrine is for teaching. There are many, many doctrines in the Old Testament, or teachings. There are many teachings and many prophecies concerning Jesus Christ.

"...**for conviction**..." (vs 16). To turn yourself around right. This is the mental part of it. You are *convicted*, or *reproved*, when you read something and you find that you are a sinner.

"...**for correction**..." (vs 16). That correction can be direct, can be through the Word of God or can be through another person helping you with the Word of God. We never want to get to a point where we are in the hand of God because we've refused all correction up to that point and God must deal with us very severely. Therefore, always keep your heart tender to God so that you can get the correction when God's Spirit leads you to repentance.

"...**for instruction in righteousness**; so that the man of God may be complete, fully equipped for every good work" (vs 16-17). This is talking to Timothy as a teacher. That he, as a man of God, "...may be complete, fully equipped for every good work" of what?

- of teaching
- of instructing

- of example
- of living

Since we're right here, let's just read the first part of 2-Tim. 4 into the record. Here's where we find ourselves today, and we also find ourselves dealing with two things. He says:

2-Timothy 4:1: "I charge you, therefore, in the sight of God, even the Lord Jesus Christ..." Every minister today, every teacher today has to take v 1 as a personal command from God as to the priority of his ministry and teaching. *It's the absolute, number one priority!* We all stand naked before God.

"...even the Lord Jesus Christ, Who is ready to judge *the living and the dead* at His appearing and His kingdom: <sup>[#1]</sup>**Preach the Word!**" (vs 1-2). What are we to preach? *The Word of God so that God the Father can teach you!* That's why.

"...Be urgent in season..." (vs 2). In other words, don't be dead and dull and boring. As we can say today, stupid and unlearned, as many are.

"...and out of season..." (vs 2). This implies that there's keeping of Holy Days, because what other seasonal thing is in the Bible that we are to keep except the Holy Days?

"...**convict, rebuke, encourage**, with all patience and doctrine.... [the reason is]: ...<sup>[#2]</sup>**For there shall come a time when they will not tolerate sound doctrine;** but according to their own lusts they shall accumulate to themselves *a great number of teachers, having ears itching to hear what satisfies their cravings*" (vs 2-3). They want to hear something new. The truth is God's Word is always *continually eternally new*. You need to understand that.

Verse 4: "And **they shall turn away their own ears from the Truth...**"

- What happens when you turn from the Truth?
- Whose right there 'Johnny on the spot' to fill it with something else? *Satan the devil with a nice little lie!*
- What happens when that occurs?

"...and **they shall be turned aside unto myths**" (v 4). Isn't that amazing? That's what's happening today right before our eyes; such as:

- Christmas
- Easter
- New Years
- that Christ was resurrected on Sunday
- that Christ did not come in the flesh
- that you have to use sacred names

All these things, "...be turned unto myths." Why is that? We'll find out.

- If you love God and you love the Truth, are you going to be turned aside to fables? *No!*
- Are you going to allow yourself to be deceived out of salvation? *No!*
- What are we talking about then?

Romans 8:5: "For those who walk according to the flesh mind the things of the flesh..."—of which myths are all wrapped up in carnal deceiving mythologies of ideas and philosophies of god; but not the true God, but the gods of this world.

"...but those who walk according to *the Spirit* mind the things of the Spirit" (v 5). That's what we're going to do when we go through this.

Verse 6: "For to be carnally minded *is* death, but to be spiritually minded *is* life and peace, because the carnal mind *is* enmity against God... [hostile to God or an enemy of God] ...for it is not subject to the Law of God; neither indeed can it *be*. But those who are in *the flesh* cannot please God" (vs 6-8). Therefore:

- they love their myths
- they love their stories
- they love the twisting of Scriptures to suit themselves to help scratch their itching ears

Verse 9: "However, you are not in *the flesh*, but in *the Spirit*, if *the Spirit of God* is indeed dwelling within you...." Many of the things that we are going to cover are going to be for those who are spiritually minded. You have to have your minds open.

"...But if anyone does not have *the Spirit of Christ*, he does not belong to Him" (v 9). That would be an interesting study, all about the 'either/or.' You either belong to Christ or you're not. All the Scriptures going through the New Testament showing that there is an absolute dividing line. There's no halfway in between. There is no middle ground in between.

- you either are Christ's or you are not
- you either have the Spirit of God or you don't have the Spirit of God

The only middle ground that there possibly can be, is when God is first calling someone, that the Spirit of God is 'with' them and it is not 'in' them until they are baptized and receive the laying on of hands. Then they are being led of God to repentance.

Verse 10: "But if Christ *be* within you, the body *is* indeed dead because of sin; however, the

Spirit *is* life because of righteousness. Now if the Spirit of Him Who raised Jesus from *the* dead is dwelling within you, He Who raised Christ from *the* dead will also quicken your mortal bodies... [make alive spiritually] ...because of His Spirit that dwells within you. So then, brethren, we are not debtors to the flesh, to live according to *the* flesh; because if you are living according to *the* flesh, you shall die... [and run off into religious deception] ...but if by *the* Spirit you are putting to death the deeds of the body, you shall live. For as many as are led by *the* Spirit of God, these are *the* sons of God” (vs 10-14).

What is this going to do for us for understanding the Word of God? This is going to do something for us that it did for Timothy, Paul, Peter, John, Matthew and Luke in writing the New Testament.

1-Corinthians 2:9: “But according as it is written, ‘*The* eye has not seen, nor *the* ear heard, neither have entered into *the* heart of man, *the* things which God has prepared for those who love Him.’” How many times do we see that it doesn’t come from within a man? ***It comes from God into us and then out from us!***

Verse 10: **“But God has revealed them to us by His Spirit, for the Spirit searches all things—even the deep things of God.”** For who among men understands the things of man except *by* the spirit of man which *is* in him? In the same way also, the things of God no one understands... [of himself] ...except *by* the Spirit of God. Now we have not received the spirit of the world, but the Spirit that *is* of God, so that we might know the things graciously given to us by God” (vs 10-12). That is to also to know the Scriptures which are freely given to us.

Verse 13: “Which things we also speak, not in words taught by human wisdom, but in *words* taught by *the* Holy Spirit *in order to* communicate spiritual things by spiritual *means*. **But *the* natural man does not receive the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand *them* because *they* are spiritually discerned**” (vs 13-14).

That’s why you have so many trying to re-edit the Greek text of the New Testament and the Hebrew text of the Old Testament to make it read so that it does away with the inspiration of all of the prophecies of Jesus Christ. We will see that when we get in particularly to Isa. 7, where it says, ‘Behold a virgin shall conceive.’ Most modern translations say, ‘Behold a young maiden shall conceive.’ That’s not unusual. That happens every day. Everyone that was a virgin that comes and tells their Mom, guess what? The question is: Who was he? I think, when we get to that, that will be very inspiring.

Let’s see what has to happen in order to understand the Scriptures—Old Testament as well as New—in particularly, *at* that point after Christ was resurrected from the dead, He did something very profound; which then ***lays the groundwork on how we can understand the prophecies of Jesus Christ in the Old Testament!***

Jesus was talking to the two men who were walking to the village of Emmaus. He was talking as He was walking:

Luke 24:25: “Then He said to them, ‘O foolish...’ These were disciples. These were ones who believed in Jesus when He was here in the flesh.

“...and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken! Was it not necessary... [obligatory or ordained] ...for the Christ to suffer these things, and to enter into His glory?’ **And beginning with Moses, and from all the prophets, He interpreted to them the things concerning Himself in all the Scriptures**” (vs 25-27). I’m sure these were all the major important Scriptures for them to understand.

Go through, in particularly, the book of Matthew and look at the number of times where Matthew wrote: ‘And this is to fulfill what was written in the Prophet Isaiah’—just that one alone—and I think you will be astounded. It also talks about the Prophet Jonah (Matt. 12).

They came in, went and ate and when He blessed the bread He vanished out of their sight and they came running back to the apostles.

Verse 33: “And they rose up that very hour *and* returned to Jerusalem; and they found the eleven and those with them assembled together, saying, ‘In truth, the Lord has risen! And He has appeared to Simon.’ Then they related the things that had happened to *them* on the road, and how He was known to them in the breaking of the bread. Now, as they were telling these things... [after this and all talking among themselves] ...**Jesus Himself stood in their midst** and said to them, ‘Peace *be* to you.’” (vs 33-36).

Verse 37: “But they were terrified and filled with fear, thinking *that* they beheld a spirit *apparition*.... [a demon in this case] ...Then He said to them, ‘Why are you troubled? And why do doubts come up in your hearts?.... [God is called the *heart-knowing* God] ...See My hands and My feet, that it is I. Touch Me and see *for yourselves*; for a spirit does not have flesh and bones, as you see Me having’” (vs 37-39). Christ is able to manifest Himself as flesh and bone, though He was raised in spirit.

Verse 40: “And after saying this, He showed them *His* hands and *His* feet. But while they were still disbelieving and wondering for joy, He said to them, ‘Do you have anything here to eat?’ Then they gave Him part of a broiled fish and a *piece* of honeycomb.... [to prove a point that it was really Him] ...And He took these *and* ate in their presence. And He said to them, ‘**These are the words that I spoke to you when I was yet with you, that *all the things which were written concerning Me in the Law of Moses and in the Prophets and in the Psalms must be fulfilled***’” (vs 40-44). That is the three part division of the Old Testament—the Law first, then the Prophets, then the Psalms. They are also called the Writings.

Verse 45: “**Then He opened their minds to understand**... [*something spiritual must take place to open your understanding*] ...**the Scriptures**, and said to them, ‘According as it is written, it was necessary for the Christ to suffer, and to rise from *the* dead the third day. And in His name, repentance and remission of sins should be preached to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. For you are witnesses of these things’” (vs 45-48).

We’re going to see what He opened their mind to understand. We’re going to add some other things into it to get a broader overall picture.

Let’s see that in the very creation of man this allowed for God to become a man. Dr. Fruchtenbaum says, ‘God/man.’ It says that Christ was not made after the manner of angels (Heb. 1). It says that He was made in the exact likeness of sinful human flesh (Rom. 8:3). The book of Rev. says that Christ was slain from the foundation of the world. All of Christ and all of God’s plan is wrapped up together beginning with His creation and purpose of man. *Nothing was by accident!*

Genesis 1:26: “And God said, ‘**Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness...**’” This was for two things:

1. that human beings can be born into the God family
2. that God could be made flesh to become a human being

Right there in that one verse, right in the beginning, *is the beginning of the revelation of Christ!* That’s why when you go to the book of Rev. He is *the First and the Last, the Beginning and the Ending*.

“...‘and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of heaven and over the livestock and over all the earth and over every creeping thing that crawls upon the earth.’ **And God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him. He created them male and**

**female**” (vs 26-27). *Of all the creation that God created, everything except man, was created by command!*

- God said, ‘Let there be light and there was light.’
- God said, ‘Let the waters bring forth.’
- God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth the animals and the four-footed beasts.’
- God said, “**Let Us make man in Our image, after Our likeness...**” (v 26).

...so that they can be after Our kind. That’s what it’s going to be.

Genesis 2:7: “Then the LORD God formed man *of the* dust of the ground...” God personally did it. Human beings are a very special creation to God. *Not only are they made in His image, He made them, personally!* This shows the personal involvement that God wants to have in our lives.

Furthermore, God is so profound in His creative abilities, that by the process of procreation, *He is able to produce every single human being as a separate, distinct individual—down to the very genes and chromosomes of that individual—that is unique, one of a kind! That is amazing!* You know what happened when He made Eve; He took a rib from Adam and made Eve.

We find a little religion slithering in here, if I can put it that way, Gen. 3. Satan is always there. I’m going to paraphrase it. Satan said, ‘I’m going to show you a better way to God so that you can be like the god’s,’ referring to himself and the demons. So, they sinned.

I want to read out of *The Tyndale Bible: Old Testament* by William Tyndale, this particular section. God had already planned for this because Jesus was slain before the foundation of the world. He did not die until He came in the flesh and died on the cross.

Genesis 3:8-15: And they heard the voice of the Lord God as He walked in the Garden in the cool of the day and Adam hid himself and his wife also from the face of the Lord God....

What do we have here? *We have God Who then manifest Himself to look just like a human being*, so that Adam and Eve could see Him and talk to Him, and He could instruct them and all of that. Obviously, God was not in His glorified form here. Why? *Because no man can be in the glorified presence of God and live!* In the glorified presence of God, flesh would be instantly consumed.

...And the Lord called Adam and said to him, “Where are you?” And he answered,

“Your voice I heard in the garden but I was afraid because I was naked therefore I hid myself.” And He said, “Who told you you were naked? Have you eaten of the tree which I bade you that you should not eat?” And Adam answered, “The woman which you gave me to bear me company, she took me of the tree and I ate.”....

Right away, with sin, you have self-justification and carnal nature. It's always like carnal nature, you blame somebody else, some other thing, some process or something.

...And the Lord said to the woman, “Wherefore did you do so?” And the woman answered and said, “Not me Lord, it's that serpent. The serpent deceived me and I ate.”....

Here's the first prophecy of Christ in the Old Testament. Right here.

...And the Lord said to the serpent, “Because you have so done, most cursed be you of all cattle and of all beasts of the field. On your belly you shall go and the earth you shall eat all the days of your life. Moreover, **I will put hatred**...

...not ‘enmity,’ *hatred*. I like Tyndale's translation.

...between you and the woman, between your seed and **her** Seed and that Seed shall tread you on the head and you shall tread it on the heel.”

Why is this the first allusion of the first prophecy of the coming of Christ? *It's because it talks about the Seed of the woman! That only refers to Christ!* Every other place where it talks about seed, it's the seed of the father. This is quite profound. Understand that in every reference to Christ and ‘seed,’ it has to do with the virgin Mary. We will see how the Scriptures in the Old Testament narrow it down to that.

Genesis 4:1-7: And Adam laid with his wife Eva...

In Tyndale's translation, it's ‘Heva.’ He puts the ‘n’ pronounced ‘h’ there. So, it's Eva.

...which conceived and there came and said, “I have gotten me a man of the Lord [or Jehovah].”....

What this really means is: ‘I have gotten me a man—Jehovah.’ Here, then, is a prophecy that they understood that it was going to be ‘God/man.’

(go to the next track)

What happened to Cain? Let's read this because I think this is quite important and fits in very good and we need to understand it.

...And she proceeded forth and bear his brother Abel. And Abel became a shepherd and Cain became a plowman. And it fortun'd in process of time, that Cain brought of the fruit of the earth an offering unto the Lord [Jehovah]. And Abel, he brought his Lord the firstlings of his sheep and of the fat of them. And the Lord looked unto Abel and to his offering, but unto Cain, unto his offering, He looked not. And Cain was wroth exceedingly and loured....

Loured means that he had *a fit of rage*.

...And the Lord said to Cain, “Why are you angry and why do you lour?....

Actually, the way it's written, “Why lourest thou?”

...Don't you know that if you do well, you shall receive it?....

What is that? What does it mean, ‘receive it’? *To receive the blessing of God if you do well!*

...But if you do evil, by and by sin lies open in the door.”....

Let's understand what this means. After Adam and Eve were kicked out of the Garden of Eden, what happened? *God put two cherubim to guard the east entrance to the Garden of Eden!*

God continued to live in the Garden of Eden. The One Who became Jesus Christ was the One Whose job it was to deal with humankind. Right at the Garden's east entrance—this ties in with the temple, too, when you understand it—there was an altar that was built where there were sacrifices offered. God would come out there and meet with them. They still had a relationship with God; howbeit, not as close as it was when they were in the Garden. Cain came up to this place and ‘by and by sin lies open in the door.’ That is, Cain had no forgiveness because he was coming there offering the wrong sacrifice.

Was Eve under the impression that Cain was a fulfillment of that prophecy? *Yes, she was!* Eve probably taught him that. Therefore, Cain thought that anything that he did was fine because he was the *one*. What does the Bible say? *‘He who exalts himself shall be abased!’* In this case, *exiled*. In the Scriptural Hebrew—not the Yiddish Hebrew of the Scriptures, but in the Levitical Scriptural Hebrew—it means, “I've gotten me a man—Jehovah.”

- Why was Cain's offering not accepted of God? *A fruit offering does not forgive sin!*

It's that simple; a fruit offering of the ground does not forgive sin.

- How do farmers get an offering that they can offer? *They buy it from someone who has an animal and sacrifice it!*
- What religion today offers fruit of the ground to their gods? *The Hindus!*

They throw all the food over in the temple where:

- the monkeys are
- the rats are
- the cows are
- the elephants are

They feel they're doing atonement. Some of them even tithe their whole wages to throw out to these animals. That's nothing more than 'Cainism'—*the way of Cain*. The blood sacrifice goes to Christ.

However, if Cain thought that he was *the one*, he probably figured in his mind that he wasn't required to do it. Maybe, in part of all of this, we're also dealing in something that he came to realize. (Just speculation—just a little reading between the lines). He came to see that maybe Abel might be *the one* instead of him; because Abel was the one who was righteous and who received the acceptance of God—*jealousy*. Why else would Cain be so motivated to kill his brother, except that he thought that Abel would usurp and take his position as the *promised seed*? That makes a great deal of sense to me.

Going along with that, Cain probably thought that he was the 'chosen seed.' So, how is it that God would favor Abel instead of him? At least they were taught somewhat along those lines, so they understood. It's generally understood that they were twins, since conception is mentioned only once. You see, now we have jealousy and rage when you think you're going to have loss.

Continuing on in *The Tyndale Bible*, it doesn't have any verses and just goes by paragraphs. However, sometimes it does make for a little easier reading—vs 8-16:

And as soon as they were in the fields, Cain fell upon his brother and slew him. And the Lord said to Cain, "Where is Abel your brother?" And he said, "I cannot tell. Am I my brother's keeper?" And He said, "What have you done? The voice of your brother's blood cries out unto me of the earth and now cursed be

you as pertaining to the earth, which opens her mouth to receive your brother's blood of your hand. And when you till the soil, she shall henceforth not give her power unto you, but a vagabond and a renegade shall you be upon the earth." And Cain said to the Lord, "My sin is greater than that it may be forgiven, than it may be forgiven...."

That's what he was seeking up here. It was a covering of his sin—forgiveness—at least to the answer that was there on the east end of Eden.

...Behold you cast me out this day from the face of the earth and from your sight. I must hid myself and be wandering and a vagabond upon the earth....

That's good, strong language. Who wanders upon the earth? You go to the book of Job and it says, 'One day the sons of God came before the LORD and Satan was among them. And the LORD said to Satan, 'What are you doing?' Satan says, 'Oh, I'm wandering to and fro in the earth.' This is also an indication that Cain was turned over to Satan.

What do you suppose Satan is going to do with that? We have our first pope. A fulfillment being the vicar of Christ (speculation). How else do you explain that the religion rose so quickly after the Flood—it was claimed to be the same religion that was before the Flood occurred—if Cain was not the first one given over to Satan, totally cut off from God?

What you have is Cain and his family; now he's given over to Satan and Satan appears and says, 'I am God! This God over here in the Garden of Eden has been unfair to you.' You can almost write the script if you know how Satan works? 'You come on over here and we're going to show you how to build cities. We're going to show you how to do things in:

- artistry
- artwork
- metalwork
- music

You read about the descendants of the line of Cain and isn't that what they did?

'...Moreover,' Cain said, 'Whosoever finds me will kill me.' And the Lord said to him, 'Not so...'

The worst punishment is to let him live and go through it—right? It's just like a lot of people today who figure that Saturday is really the great sports day and the great shopping day; not realizing that *the worst thing that they could possibly do is, be cut*

***off from God and have no fellowship with God because they don't keep the Sabbath!***

That's satanic thinking. In this, we're seeing the rivalry between *the true Seed*—which was going to become Christ—and now *the false seed* through Cain. Cain sure enough established the world's first religion and all religions go back to Cain.

You read in the book of Jude about what is called '*the way of Cain*.' There is the reason. That's why I'm spending time on this because you can't understand the Truth of the Messiah, the God/man, unless you understand what also happened with Cain, Satan and rest of the human beings under him.

'...Whosoever slays Cain shall be punished sevenfold.' And the Lord put a mark upon Cain...

I don't know what the mark is. I've speculated that it was a cross. Why is it that all pagan religions have crosses? Read the book, *The Two Babylons* by Alexander Hislop, and I think he brings that out. We can't know *exactly, for sure* what the mark is, but let me read you Tyndale's marginal comment:

Of this place, no doubt the pope, which in all things makes himself equal with God, took an occasion to mark all his creatures and so forbid, under pain of excommunication, that no man, whether he be king or emperor, be so hardly to punishment them for whatever mischief they do, the crown has given to them a license to do what they list a protection and a sure sanctuary.

In other words, Tyndale is saying that the same lawless practices of popery is what he saw in the event with Cain and Abel. *That's something! Tyndale had some great insight!* That can only come from the Spirit of God.

'...that no man that found him should kill him. And Cain went out from the face of the Lord and dwelt in the land of Nod... [land of wandering] ...on the east side of Eden.

He was totally cut off from God. If you're totally cut off from God and you're given over to Satan, guess what's going to happen? *He is progeny and how they developed all the things that they had!*

vs 25-26: Adam also lay with his wife yet again...

The *King James* sanitized it by saying, 'and Adam knew his wife Eve.' Well, he 'knew' her; he was with her every day. This means as Tyndale translated it:

...and she bare a son and called his name Seth; 'for God says, 'she has given me another son for Abel, whom Cain slew.' And Seth begat a son and called his name Enos. At that time men began to call on the name of God.

Or, 'to call themselves *by* the name of God' and refer to themselves as the sons of God. Enoch:

Gen. 5:18-32: And Jared lived one hundred and sixty-two years and begat Enoch. And Jared lived after he begat Enoch eight hundred years and begat sons and daughters. And all the days of Jared were nine hundred and sixty-two years. And Enoch lived sixty-five years and begat Methuselah and Enoch walked with God....

All of those who are righteous, we'll see here, walked with God. We don't find that in the New Testament in the same way. Why? *Before the Flood God continued to live in the Garden of Eden!* They could go to the east entrance and meet there with God.

- they could walk with God
- they could talk with God
- they could see God

It also says that *Noah walked with God*.

There is an illusion here to the continuing thing of the man/God, because Methuselah means that *when this one dies, He shall come*. So, they thought that when Methuselah would die, the Messiah would come. However, it should read: And when this one dies it (the Flood) shall come. It's still an illusion to the coming Messiah the God/man. To confirm that, to go along with that:

...And Enoch walked with God after he begot Methuselah three hundred years and begot sons and daughters. And all the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty-five years....

Tyndale understood that "...all the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty-five years" means that *he died*. He didn't go to heaven as the Protestants claim.

...And then Enoch lived a Godly life and was no more seen for God took him away.

Which means that he was buried just like Moses and just like Aaron. The hand of God Himself buried Moses. Why? *So that no man would know where he was buried!*

We read in the book of Jude that Satan desired the body of Moses. Michael the angel

withstood him and said, 'The Lord rebuke you!' Can you imagine what Satan would have done if he could have had the body of Moses and encase it in a glass tomb filled with honey to preserve Moses' body, so everyone could pass by the altar and see Moses? So, God took him.

...Methuselah lived one hundred and eighty-seven years and begat Lamech. And Methuselah, after he begat Lamech, lived seven hundred and eighty-two years....

He lived 969 years and the truth is, he died the year of the Flood. That's why a lot of people did not believe that the Flood was coming. What did they believe? *They believed that the Messiah was coming and didn't believe that the Flood was coming!* It's just like today. When Christ returns they're not going to believe it. They're just the reverse.

...And Lamech live a hundred and eighty-two years and begat a son and called his name Noah...

Noah means *peace*. Again, this building up to the understanding that you have, 'When he shall die, he shall come.' Now the grandson is called *peace*. What is Christ called? *The Prince of Peace!* The truth is that there was peace because the Flood destroyed all the wicked. Here are all the illusions in here concerning Christ.

...saying, "This same shall comfort us...

another work of the Messiah

...concerning the work and sorrow of our hands which we have about the earth, which the Lord has cursed." And Lamech lived after he began Noah five hundred and ninety-five and begat sons and daughters. And all the days of Lamech were seven hundred and seventy-nine years, then he died. And when Noah was five hundred years old he begat Shem, Ham and Japheth.

Now we get into the Flood. Very interesting things in the Flood. They thought that Noah was going to bring peace, but what happened?

Gen. 6:1-12: It came to pass when men began to multiply upon the earth and have begot them daughters, the sons of God saw that the daughters of men were fair...

The Jews, to this day, still believe that it's fallen angels co-habiting with women to create a monster race of people. Angels cannot procreate. Christ said very clearly that they are 'not given in marriage neither do they marry.' Why? *They do not need to prolong their species because they do not die!*

"...sons of God..." can refer to angels in certain passages in the Bible. In this particular case, it cannot refer to angels because it *cannot be done—kind begets kind!* Angels have no sex life. Fallen angels like to have what we could call 'demonic sex' with people who are perverted and give themselves over to that. That is the phenomena which occurs, but no child has ever been born of that.

...and they took unto them wives...

They were married. Christ said that angels are 'not given in marriage, neither do they marry.'

...which they best liked among them all. And the Lord said, "My Spirit shall not always strive with man for they are flesh. Nevertheless, I will give them yet space a hundred and twenty years....

That makes it very clear. There was 120 years left before the Flood. The next verse says in the *King James* says that 'there were giants in those days.' Notice how Tyndale translates it here:

...And there were tyrants in the world in those days...

*Tyrants!* Tyndale understood that hierarchy does not come from God. Tyrants: A whole bunch of little dictators. Who was the world's great tyrant after the Flood? *Nimrod! Yes, indeed!* The reason I'm bringing this out is because this shows the difference between the way of God and the way of Satan.

...for after that the **children** of God...

rather that the sons of God

...had gone into the daughters of men....

At that time, all people could call themselves the children of God because they were close to the creation.

...The same children were the mightiest of the world and men of renown.

A lot of Michael Jordans going around—without Nikes—or whomever it may be. Arnold Schwarzenegger with his machinegun and great muscles. He's a man of renown today. It could also mean: Men renamed after a name of God.

...And when God saw that the wickedness of men was increased upon the earth and that all the imagination and thoughts of his heart was only evil continually, He repented that He made man upon the earth and sorrowed in His heart. And said, "I will destroy mankind which I have made from off the face of the earth, both man, beast, worm and fowl of the air, for it repents Me that I have made them;" but

yet Noah found grace in the sight of the Lord....

—which then, is a saving by grace, which then, gets to the work of the Messiah.

...And these are the generations of Noah. He was a righteous man and uncorrupt in his time and **walked with God**....

Instead of bringing peace the way that people would think, he brought peace because of the Flood, because it destroyed the wicked.

...Noah begat three sons Shem, Ham and Japheth. And the earth was corrupt in the sight of God and was full of mischief.... [wickedness] ...And God looked upon the earth and lo it was corrupt for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth.

Let's stop right here. What do we have in the prophecy that Jesus gave which is commonly called the Olivet Prophecy? What did He say concerning Noah's days? *As it was in the days of Noah, so shall it also be at the coming of the Son of man!*

Have we corrupted God's way on the earth? *So much so that Jesus said, 'When the Son of man comes, shall He find the true faith on the earth?'* That's something to think about. We haven't seen the end of it, yet. The 'great apostasy' is the ecumenical movement; which is going back to *the way of Cain! Amazing!*

We're going to see how absolutely profound the way that the Old Testament and New Testament are woven together. You can't separate one from the other. They are woven together intrinsically.

You know the rest of it, Noah and his family were saved. The Flood came and destroyed them all. Gen. 12. There's a direct prophecy of the coming Messiah Who would be the God/man. This is through Abraham. Before we get to Gen. 12, let's just rehearse Gen. 11: They built the tower of Babel. This is where Alexander Hislop does such a great job in writing in *The Two Babylons* showing that the worship of the pope is the same as the worship of all the ancient pagan religions which came from the tower of Babel.

Out of that, here's the whole world back into confusion again. God gave himself a promise. What did He promise Noah with the rainbow? *He would never again destroy the world with a flood!* If you read *The Works of Flavius Josephus* by Flavius Josephus, you will find the reason that they built the tower of Babel the way that they did, and buttressed it with bitumen—which is asphalt and oil—to make it waterproof, in case that what they were doing,

God would bring a flood again and they could all go into the tower and be saved.

There was willful rebellion against God. Now, God says, 'I'm going to start with one man.' I might add here, 'So much for a Board.'

Genesis 12:1-2: Now the Lord had said unto Abram, "Get you out of your country and from your kindred and from your father's house unto a land that I will show you."

Hold your place here and go to Luke 14. We're going to see New Testament doctrine in order to be a disciple of Jesus Christ; Gen. 12:1 is New Testament doctrine. Here's the same requirement for us today. If you want to come to Christ, here's what you must do. Here's what Abraham did and was later called the 'friend of God.'

Jesus said to them: Luke 14:26: "If anyone comes to Me and does not hate his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brothers and sisters, and, in addition, his own life also, he cannot be My disciple.... [the same requirement given to Abraham] ...And whoever does not carry his cross and come after Me cannot be My disciple" (vs 26-27).

- Isn't that what Abraham had to do?
- Did he not have to sit down and count the cost?
- Was he not commanded to leave?

Let's go back there and read it in Tyndale's Bible:.

...“Get out of your country...  
that's against nationalism  
...and from your kindred...  
all of your relatives  
...and from your father's house...  
forsake father and mother  
...unto a land that I will show you....  
and He didn't tell Abraham where it was.

In v 2 is a direct prophecy of the coming of Messiah the God/man. This means that out of all the human beings on the face of the earth that have been up to this point we start out with Eve and it's going to be the seed of the woman. We come down through all the righteous line, down through Noah on the other side of the Flood, and now God begins to limit it to the seed of one man. *Whoever the Messiah is, must come from Abraham! It can't be from anybody else!* We're going to see, as we go along, it narrows it down to a very specific person, mother, and a place. *This is profound!*

...And I will make of you a great nation and I will bless you and make your name great and you shall be a blessing. And I will bless them that bless you, curse them that curse you and in you...

In Abraham, but later meaning his seed.

...shall all the families of the earth be blessed."

So, Abraham argued with God. **NO!**

Abraham departed.

It's told in Gen 26:5 that 'Abraham obeyed the voice of God.' ***Here is the first prophecy coming down to Christ through Abraham!***

Let's see where Paul wrote of that. That's why God has not discriminated against the Arabs (by bringing the Messiah through Abraham). The father of the Arabs—Ishmael—was rejected. Why? Because if God worked through Ishmael, then He would go contrary to His Word. If He went contrary to His Word, then God would be a liar. ***If God is a liar, then there is no Truth!***

Galatians 3 is devoted to Abraham just like the whole of Rom. 4 is devoted to Abraham.

Galatians 3:8: "Now *in* the Scriptures, God, seeing in advance that He would justify the Gentiles by faith... [all nations shall be blessed] ...preached the Gospel beforehand to Abraham, *saying*, 'In you shall all the nations be blessed.'" There it is right there. That's how Paul preached from the Old Testament, with Abraham concerning Christ.

Verse 9: "*It is* for this reason that those who are of faith are being blessed with the believing Abraham. For as many as are *relying* on works of law are under a curse..." (v 9-10)—those who are religious to do their own works. Why are you under a curse? ***Law-keeping cannot give you eternal life! Law-keeping cannot forgive your sins! Only the death of Christ can forgive your sins, and only the life of Christ can give you eternal life!***

"...because it is written, 'Cursed *is* everyone who does not continue in all things that have been written in the Book of the Law to do them.' Therefore, *it is* evident that no one is being justified before God by *means of works of law*; because *it is written*, 'The just shall live by faith.' Now then, the law is not based on faith; but, 'The man who practices these things shall live in them.' **Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law...**" (vs 10-13)—the *penalty* of the Law through forgiveness of sin. Christ *has not* redeemed us *from* the Law as the Protestants read it.

...having become a curse for us (for it is written, 'Cursed *is* everyone who hangs on a tree') **in order that the blessing of Abraham might come to the Gentiles by Christ Jesus, and that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith**" (vs 13-14).

Verse 16: "Now, to Abraham and to his Seed... [no one else's] ...were the promises spoken. He does not say, 'and to *your* seeds,' as of many... [In referring to the Messiah, or the coming God-man.] ...but as of one, 'and to your Seed,' which is Christ." That goes all the way back to Gen. 12 and is further expanded in Rom. 4.

All Scripture from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter.

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) 2-Timothy 3:13-14
- 2) John 6:44-45
- 3) 2-Timothy 3:14-17
- 4) 2-Timothy 4:1-4
- 5) Romans 8:5-14
- 6) 1-Corinthians 2:9-14
- 7) Luke 24:25-27, 33-48
- 8) Genesis 1:26-27
- 9) Genesis 2:7
- 10) Genesis 3:8-15
- 11) Genesis 4:1-26
- 12) Genesis 5:18-32
- 13) Genesis 6:1-12
- 14) Genesis 12:1-2
- 15) Luke 14:26-27
- 16) Galatians 3:8-14, 16

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Isaiah 7
- Matthew 12
- Hebrews 1
- Romans 8:3
- Genesis 3; 11; 26:5
- Romans 4

#### Also referenced:

##### Books:

- *The Tyndale Bible: Old Testament* by William Tyndale
- *Textus Receptus*
- *The Two Babylons* by Alexander Hislop
- *The Works of Flavius Josephus* by Flavius Josephus

#### Sermon Series: *Hosea Prophecy*

FRC:nfs  
Transcribed: 11-24-14  
Proofed: bo—12-22-14

## Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament II

### The “Seed”/Line of Christ

Fred R. Coulter

How did the apostles, not having the New Testament, preach about Jesus Christ? They didn't have the New Testament. All they had was the Old Testament. How would they preach about Jesus Christ? Later, God inspired the apostles to write and compile the New Testament and it was the Church that put the New and the Old Testament together.

There are so many things concerning the prophecies of Jesus Christ in the Old Testament. I've been able to learn quite a bit of these things from Arnold Fruchtenbaum. In going through some of the material that he has, he did not bring out Gen. 15 nor Gen. 17, which are very important concerning Christ. I'm going to add that to it. When we get to the Psalms, he did not cover very much concerning the Psalms. So, I'm going to add to what he brings out. Of course, Psalms 22, 23, 24, 69, 110 and those various Psalms, we already knew that they referred to Christ, also, but he brings some other information which is important with it.

Interlaced and interspersed in all the Psalms are the words of David. and then all of a sudden, there will be the Words of Christ and then back to David. I'm going to try, when we get to the Psalms and we cover the major things, to go back through and pull out what I believe are some of the inspired words telling some of the thoughts of Christ.

It's very interesting that the prophets told about the times and the circumstances about Jesus Christ, but *David was inspired to bring more of the thoughts of Christ*. We'll see that when we get to the Psalms. Let's begin this sermon by reviewing Gen. 12 the calling of Abraham. It started out with Adam and Eve, then:

- the prophecy of the Seed of the woman
- it would come down through the righteous line from Adam to Seth
- on down through Noah, now it's being narrowed down
- on this side of the Flood, it's narrowed down to one man

This 'one man' is Abraham, although his name was not changed from Abram to Abraham until we get to Gen. 17.

What I want you to understand is, that this is New Testament doctrine. You come to Gen. 12 and we're going to see that a lot of the things in what is supposedly called the Old Testament, dealing with the patriarchs, David and so forth, are actually New Testament doctrine. In fact, we find that the Church

is called the Tabernacle of David by the Apostle James, when he was describing about how the Church was raised up to make room for the Gentiles {note sermons: *The Tabernacle of David and The Key of David 1 & 2*}.

Just like with David, he had so many things that related to the things concerning the New Testament, so likewise, Abraham had the requirement of the New Testament brought to him right at the very first.

Genesis 12:1: “And the LORD said to Abram, ‘Get out of your country, and from your kindred, and from your father’s house into a land that I will show you. And I will make *of* you a great nation. And I will bless you and make your name great. And you shall be a blessing. And I will bless those that bless you and curse the one who curses you. **And in you shall all families of the earth be blessed.**’ Then Abram departed, even as the LORD had spoken to him....” (vs 1-4).

We're going to see that God requires the same thing of us, in a little different way. We don't have to leave our land and our country because now the Gospel is preached in all the world. Abraham had to leave Ur of the Chaldees because that was the center of idolatry. The same thing is required of us only we don't leave our lands, because the Gospel is preached in the whole world. However, if land becomes an idol to you, then you need to forsake that, too, if you understand what I mean.

Just like the young man who came to Christ and said, ‘Good Master, what should I do that I may inherit eternal life?’ Christ said to keep the commandments. The young man said that he had done all that. Christ said, ‘Sell everything that you have.’ That was the young man's idol.

Luke 14:26: “‘If anyone comes to Me and does not hate his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brothers and sisters, and, in addition, his own life also, he cannot be My disciple.’”

- Is that not what God required of Abraham?
- Did he not have to leave his father's house, leave all his relatives, leave his real estate holdings and everything that he had up there in Ur?
- *Yes, he did!*

This Scripture means that **you do not have the power** to become Christ's disciple.

Verse 27: “**And whoever does not carry his cross and come after Me cannot be My disciple**; for which one of you, desiring to build a tower, does not first sit down and count the cost, whether he has *sufficient* for its completion?” (vs 27-28).

Also, there's something that is very important. *The greatest aspect of what Abraham did was obey the voice of God!* That's what's so important. All the words that we have in the Bible are either:

- the spoken Words of God
- the written Words that God spoke:
  - ✓ to Moses
  - ✓ to Samuel
  - ✓ that David was inspired from inspiration to write
  - ✓ the history that was preserved for us in the Kings and Chronicles

*It's all the voice of God!* Somewhere along the line it has to come back to *the voice of God*. We're going to read the very words of Christ here.

John 12:47: “But if anyone hears My words and does not believe, I do not judge him; for I did not come to judge the world, but to save the world. The one who rejects Me and does not receive My words has one who judges him; the word which I have spoken, that shall judge him in the last day. For I have not spoken from Myself; but the Father, Who sent Me, gave Me commandment Himself, what I should say and what I should speak. And I know that His commandment is eternal life. Therefore, whatever I speak, I speak exactly as the Father has told Me” (vs 47-50).

We will see that this principle ties in all the way through—with Abraham, with Isaac, with Jacob—all the way down with all of those who followed God. *Abraham obeyed the voice of God!*

Genesis 12:4: “Then Abram departed, even as the LORD had spoken to him. And Lot went with him. And Abram was seventy-five years old when he departed from Haran.” At 75, I don't care if you're a young 75, it's still pretty hard to pick up, move and change. When Abraham left, he took with him all his servants. He had 70 people with him altogether, when he started. Down through the years it grew.

Ten years later: This is important to understand; let's realize something that is done in Gen. 15, because this has directly to do with the coming of Jesus Christ and directly to do with the timing of the death of Jesus. Remember, in this we are talking about the God/man, the One Who would become the Christ.

In this God is showing in Gen. 15 that God is basing His promises to Abraham; ***all of God's plan is going to come right down through Abraham and his seed from that time on!*** God is going to guarantee it by the pledge of His own future death. That's what's so important to understand. The thing of God becoming man so that He could die, God planned for this with the very beginning of creation by making man in His own image.

We see with Abraham—or Abram, in this case, not yet called Abraham—that what God is going to do is set out the covenant promises.

Genesis 15:4: “And behold, the Word of the LORD *came* to him saying, ‘This man shall not be your heir... [Eliezer of Damascus] ...but he that shall come forth out of your own loins shall be your heir.’” We're going to see when we get to Gen. 17 that it also had to come out of the bowls of Sarah; just from Abraham alone was not enough. Ishmael was from Abraham alone through Hagar, but he was not the heir. This is only part of it here.

I'm going to tell you the timing of this. I go through Gen. 15 in detail in a sermon about the three most important verses in the Bible. This is the night of the 14<sup>th</sup> day of the first month. That can be ***absolutely proved*** from other Scriptures. ***This is the Passover night!*** This is why we keep the Passover beginning on the 14<sup>th</sup> and we keep it in the night of the 14<sup>th</sup> because the Words of eternal life were given here, in prophecy, to Abraham. We have four things that were given:

1. prophecy of Abraham's own seed, physical
2. the prophecy of spiritual Seed
3. the prophecy of the physical land
4. the prophecy of the spiritual kingdom because of the spiritual Seed

That's written about in great detail in the book *The Christian Passover*.

Verse 5: “And He brought him outside and said, ‘Look now toward the heavens and number the stars—if you are able to count them.’ And He said to him, ‘So shall your seed be.’” The stars of heaven reflect the *spiritual* sons. {note: Dan. 12:3-4; Matt. 13:43; 1-John 3:1-3; Rev. 1:13-20}.

This was given on the night of the 14<sup>th</sup>. The Words of eternal life for the New Covenant were *also* given by Jesus Christ on the night of the 14<sup>th</sup> (John 14-17). The parallel fits in. In other words, John 14-17 is a fulfillment of Gen. 15:5. The way was now made for the spiritual Seed: “...So shall your seed be.” In Gen. 15:4 and 6 we have other *New Testament doctrines: Faith and imputed righteousness* (Rom. 4).

These promises were given when Abraham was yet uncircumcised, a very important legal thing with God. Some people don't like the legal things of the Bible, but God is the Author of law, as Lawgiver. He does things in a covenant, legal way. This is a covenant that God has given.

Verse 6: "**And he... [Abram] ...believed in the LORD. And He accounted it to him for righteousness.**" Why was belief counted for righteousness? *Because belief is the very basis for any kind of obedience!* Obedience from non-belief is not counted as obedience. That is counted as hypocrisy. You must believe, and it must be from the heart.

In this case, there was nothing for Abram to do. He couldn't count the stars because that's an impossibility and he couldn't make his own seed shine as the stars in heaven; only God can do that. *When you're told by God something, then you believe it!* When you *believe* that is the basis for everything that you do.

Just like, for example, in keeping the Sabbath. To keep the Sabbath because it's a commandment, God expects that of everybody; but to keep it because you believe from the heart that God created that as a day of fellowship with you, now you are into the purpose of the Sabbath. Therefore, the Sabbath means more to you because it's not just a religious, punctilious thing that you do from sunset to sunset. Righteousness is imputed to you—a spiritual righteousness—which you do not derive by the letter of the law punctiliously keeping it from sunset to sunset. Do you understand that? *On the Sabbath Day, God gives you His grace!*

Verse 7: "And He said to him, 'I *am* the LORD that brought you out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give you this land to inherit it.' And he said, 'Lord GOD, by what shall I know that I shall inherit it?' And He said to him, 'Take Me a heifer of three years old, and a she-goat of three years old, and a ram of three years old, and a turtledove, and a young pigeon.' And he took all these to himself, and divided them in the middle... [from head to toe, across the spine of the back] ...and laid each piece opposite the other... [made a little path between the two halves] ...but he did not divide the birds" (vs 7-10).

This is a special covenant sacrifice. In the sermon about the three most important verses in the Bible I discuss that quite thoroughly, but I'll just review it.

This a maledictory oath where God, by passing through these animals, is pledging His death. We have God, man, the death all right here to accomplish, to complete the promises given in Gen.

15:4 and 5. First you have promises given, then you have a covenant death. The covenant death is represented by these animals. What you are saying when you pass through it is that you agree to this and if you do not fulfill it, you will die the same way.

Christ had to die because He had to end the covenant He established with Israel. You can't take away part of a covenant without dying. You either do the whole thing or none of it. That's why the covenant with Israel was separate, so that when He died—and this is a prophecy of His death—that would fulfill the covenant with Israel; so that He could establish the New Covenant with us, the New Covenant of eternal life. Both of these are contained in Gen. 15.

Verse 11: "And when the birds of prey came down upon the carcasses, Abram drove them away. And it came to pass, as the sun was going down [setting], that a deep sleep fell upon Abram..." (vs 11-12). This is the same time of day on the 14<sup>th</sup> day portion, that Christ died. ***This was symbolic of showing the death of Christ!***

"...And, behold, a horror of great darkness fell upon him!" (v 12). Obviously, the only way that you can express death to someone to show in this covenant pledge a coming death was to simulate death by this 'deep sleep and horrible great darkness' while he was still conscious. How else are you going to do it? If you actually caused Abraham to die, he would not know that he was dead because the 'dead know nothing.' That's why God did it this way.

Here's the pledge. Verse 13: "And He said to Abram, 'You must surely know that your seed shall be sojourners in a land *that is* not theirs, (and shall serve them *and they shall* afflict them) four hundred years. And also I will judge that nation whom they shall serve. And afterward they shall come out with great substance. And you shall go to your fathers in peace. You shall be buried in a good old age. But in the fourth generation they shall come here again, for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.' **And it came to pass—when the sun went down and it was dark—behold, a smoking furnace and a burning lamp passed between those pieces**" (vs 13-17). This is the only way that Abram is going to know that God passed between the pieces.

Verse 18: "In the same day the LORD made a covenant with Abram, saying, 'I have given this land to your seed, from the river of Egypt to the great river, the river Euphrates.'" Then all of the land of the Canaanites.

Did God fulfill these things? *Yes!* I'll just say right here—it's in the book *The Christian*

*Passover*—this was fulfilled in Exo. 12:40-41. Four hundred and thirty years later, to the self-same day—which is the beginning of the 15<sup>th</sup>—they (Israelites) came out of Egypt. They also, after 40 years of wandering, took possession of the land on the 15<sup>th</sup> day of the first month. **God fulfilled it exactly to the day!**

I don’t think we need anything else to convince us that the Holy Days are important, because they reveal the plan of God. This does really reveal that God had it in mind from the beginning, and that God does everything on time. With the prophecies that He had concerning Himself, Who was to become Jesus Christ, this is a very profound and detailed chapter. All of the rest of the Bible flows from these verses. Everything else flows from these verses.

Another thing that is important to understand concerning a covenant, covenant law is this way {note sermon series: *The Covenants of God*}: Promises are not of any binding value, or an agreement is not of any binding value, unless it is covenanted with a representative death and the shedding of blood.

This applies to us in the New Testament: When you are baptized, you are baptized into a covenant death. You have pledged your death in exchange for eternal life through Jesus Christ. Jesus Christ’s covenant death pledges the forgiveness of your sins. It was His blood that was shed, which then is applied to you for **your** imputed righteousness.

When you are baptized, as Paul writes in Rom. 6, you are conjoined into the death of Christ, which is a covenant death. *Your relationship to God is bound by an **irrevocable covenant*** that if you endure unto the end, at the resurrection you will receive eternal life. If you do not endure to the end, you have already pledged your covenant death in the Lake of Fire. That’s why God doesn’t want us to play or practice religion.

Gen. 17 is a subsidiary covenant to the first covenant.

- Why?
- Why did God have to make a subsidiary covenant to the first covenant?

It is very important to understand.

Galatians 3:14: “In order that the blessing of Abraham might come to the Gentiles by Christ Jesus, *and* that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.” This all relates back to Gen. 15 and 22.

Verse 15: “Brethren (I am speaking from a human perspective), even when a man’s covenant...

[in this case, we talking about God’s covenants] ...has been ratified [confirmed], no one nullifies *it*, or adds a codicil to it.” In covenant law, you cannot add a codicil to it. Testamental law you can change anytime while your living:

- you can add to
- you can take away from
- you can disinherit
- you can add other heirs to it at your will, as long as you are living

Covenant doesn’t start out that way nor does it end that way. A covenant is based upon promises and then the pledge of covenant death is made. Nothing can change that. You can’t ‘add to’ or ‘take away from.’

Verse 16: “Now, to Abraham and to his Seed were the promises spoken. He does not say, ‘and to *your* seeds,’ as of many; but as of one... [Gen. 22] ...‘and to your Seed,’ which is Christ.”

When we come to Gen. 17, the reason that God had to make a subsidiary covenant to the first one was that the first one was already set by the passing between of the parts of the animals and you couldn’t add one thing to it or take away from it. If you’re going to add something, it must be in a separate covenant.

This covenant, like the covenant with Israel, was a separate covenant so that they could later be extinguished without disturbing the first covenant. That’s very important to grasp. ***The first covenant cannot be changed! In order to fulfill the promise of physical seed, God makes a separate, subsidiary, covenant!***

Genesis 17:1: “And when Abram was ninety-nine years old, the LORD appeared to Abram and said to him, ‘I *am* the Almighty God! Walk before Me and be perfect. And **I will make My covenant between Me and you, and will multiply you exceedingly**’” (vs 1-2). God already made one covenant so this is the *second, or subsidiary, covenant*.

Verse 3: “And Abram fell on his face. And God talked with him, saying, ‘As for Me, behold, My covenant is with you, and you shall be a father of many nations’” (vs 3-4). He’s expanding the first part of the promise. With this second covenant God’s expanding the promise of physical seed. Of course, ***that physical seed will end up being in Christ!*** That’s why this is important.

Verse 5: Neither shall your name any more be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham; for I have made you a father of many nations. And I will make you exceedingly fruitful, and I will make nations of you, and kings shall come from you. And

I will establish My covenant between Me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be God to you and to your seed after you. And I will give the land to you in which you are a sojourner, and to your seed after you, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession. And I will be their God” (vs 5-8). God has expanded on that promise of physical seed and the land.

Verse 9: And God said to Abraham, ‘And you shall keep My covenant, you and your seed after you in their generations. **This is My covenant, which you shall keep...**’ (vs 9-10). The first one was for *God* to keep. This one is for *Abraham* to keep.

“...between Me and you and your seed after you. Every male child among you shall be circumcised. And you shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin. **And it shall be a sign of the covenant between Me and you.** And a son of eight days shall be circumcised among you, every male child in your generations; he that is born in the house, or bought with silver of any foreigner who is not of your seed. He that is born in your house, and he that is bought with your silver, must be... [necessary/obligatory] ...circumcised” (v.10-13).

I am sure that this is where the argument came in the New Testament Church that it’s obligatory to be circumcised. *Right here!* They didn’t understand covenant law. *Circumcision of the flesh was superseded by circumcision of the heart, which is a greater and higher circumcision.*

“...And My covenant shall be in your flesh for an everlasting covenant. And the uncircumcised male child whose flesh of his foreskin is not circumcised, that soul shall be cut off from his people—for he has broken My covenant.’ And God said to Abraham... [now we bring in Sarah] ...‘As for Sarai your wife, you shall not call her name Sarai, but her name *shall be* Sarah. And I will bless her, and give you a son also of her. Yes, I will bless her, and **she shall be a mother of nations—kings of people shall be from her**” (vs 13-16).

God has narrowed down, as we are coming down to the promised Seed, that it must be from Abraham’s own body and from Sarah’s own body, combined. That’s why later Ishmael—even though God said He would make a great nation of Ishmael, who became the father of the Arabs—was not of the covenant.

Verse 17: “And Abraham fell upon his face and laughed, and said in his heart, ‘Shall *a child* be born to him that is a hundred years old? And shall Sarah, who is ninety years old, bear?’”

Verse 19: “And God said, ‘Sarah your wife shall bear you a son indeed....’”

- Is the Word of God true?
- Does everything the God says happen?
- *Yes, even if we don’t really grasp it!*

I don’t think this was unbelief because Abraham was called ‘faithful.’ At 100-years-old and 90-years-old, it is kind of hard to grasp how this thing is going to happen. *Menopause was 30 years ago! Everything has shut down, but in order to prove the power of God He did the impossible!*

Let’s compare that to taking young 25-year-old people... There’s no problem having children of your own. As a matter of fact, some of them can’t even turn it off. They have 10, 12, 14, 15 children. As it was with Adam and Eve, they lived so long that Josephus wrote that they had 56 children. If those 56 had 56 each, in just a few years you’d have 1000s upon 1000s.

They calculated that from Adam and Eve, there could have been as many as 1½-2-billion people by the time the Flood came. This is why God chose Abraham and Sarah. God knew what He was doing. He was going to wait until it was physically impossible for them to have children to give the promise and *then* make it happen.

Verse 18: “And Abraham said to God, ‘Oh, that Ishmael might live before You!’ And God said, ‘Sarah your wife shall bear you a son indeed. And you shall call his name Isaac. And I will establish My covenant with him for an everlasting covenant, and with his seed after him. And as for Ishmael, I have heard you. Behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, and will multiply him exceedingly. He shall beget twelve princes, and I will make him a great nation. **But I will establish My covenant with Isaac**, whom Sarah shall bear to you at this set time in the next year” (vs 18-21).

*Oh, I wish we knew what day this was!* This might nail some things down pretty close for us; but we can just *speculate*. Since Isaac was a type of Christ (Gen. 22), could it be that he was born on the same day that Jesus was born on centuries later? God said, ‘a set time.’ In other words, *at the appointed time*.

Verse 22: “And He left off talking with him, and God went up from Abraham.”

Then they had the circumcision. Remember what I said that all covenants must be ratified by blood. The blood of the ratification of this covenant was not what God did, but what Abraham did. The blood of this covenant and the ratification for it was *the blood of circumcision*.

God would not have Isaac conceived while Abraham was in 'uncircumcision,' because *the physical circumcision was a fore-type of the spiritual circumcision that would come later!*

Gen. 22 is another very profound chapter. This is the *irrevocable oath rather than a third covenant, as I said*. I was not quite correct when I first brought it out about the three covenants of Abraham. This is the irrevocable oath. As we go through, Abraham is a type of God the Father, since Abraham is a father. Isaac is a type of Christ, being the only beloved son. There are many parallels here.

Genesis 22:1: "And it came to pass after these things that God tested Abraham..." God doesn't tempt anyone with evil. He will test you. Satan is the one who comes around and tempts you with evil.

"...and said to him, 'Abraham!' And he said, 'Here I am.' And He said, 'Take now your son, your only *son* Isaac, whom you love..." (vs 1-2). The only begotten son Isaac. Ishmael was not counted. Ishmael was Sarah's way of trying to get the promise fulfilled which was given to Abraham.

Human beings cannot fulfill the promise that God gives. If you try and work out a promise that God has given, chances are it's going to fall flat on it's face. Sarah thought, 'Let's work this out. You got the promise. It's going to be of your own bowels and I am just as dry as an old tree. Why don't you take Hagar. She's young and spry.' Sure enough, out came Ishmael. The world has never been the same down to this day, with great hatred and antagonism. It is only counted with Isaac.

It's kind of hard on the ego, I will admit. It's hard on the Arabs' ego to admit that they are the sons of Abraham, but not of the covenant. That is bitter gall to this day. The reason is because Ishmael was rejected and he was not the seed of the promise. It's hard for them to admit that they are the seed of Abraham, but that Ishmael was not the promised one.

What they do in their religion is they say that Ishmael was the one who fulfilled Gen. 22, not Isaac. That doesn't mean anything to God. They can say whatever they want, do whatever they want, the Word of God is going to stand. As the Apostle Paul said, 'You can do nothing against the Truth, but only for it.' Even if you're against the Truth, what are you doing? *You're creating a testimony that it is true, because you are against it!* Have you ever thought of it that way? *That's something!*

(go to the next track)

As we mentioned, in spite of all the trying of human beings they cannot undo the Truth of God, or

the Words of God. You can't do anything against the Truth. You might even kill people, but you still can't do anything against the Truth.

Verse 2: "And He said, 'Take now your son, your only son Isaac..." God didn't even recognize Ishmael in this whole thing. God already said, 'I'll bless him and he'll be a great nation.' That ended that with Ishmael.

"...whom you love, and go into the land of Moriah, and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell you.' And Abraham rose up early in the morning and saddled his donkey, and took two *of* his young men with him, and Isaac his son. And he split the wood for the burnt offering, and rose up and went to the place of which God had told him. Then on the third day Abraham lifted up his eyes and saw the place afar off. And Abraham said to his young men, 'You stay here with the donkey, and I and the boy will go yonder and worship, and come again to you.' And Abraham took the wood of the burnt offering and laid it upon Isaac his son..." (vs 2-6).

That means he put it on his back. They had some sort of wood carrying thing similar to an 'A-frame' that you see Koreans carry wood on. They stacked it on. So, Isaac carried his own wood for his own burnt offering. That's much like Christ carrying His own cross, which He would be sacrificed on.

"...And he took the fire *pot* in his hand..." (v 6). That means he probably had a kettle and he carried it. Obviously, you're not going to carry fire in your hand; your hand won't be there very long.

"...and a knife. And they both went together. And Isaac spoke to Abraham his father and said, 'My father.' And he said, 'Here I *am*, my son.' And he said, 'Behold the fire and the wood.... ['Look, I see the fire and the wood.'] ...But where is the lamb for a burnt offering?'" (vs 6-7).

This takes a great deal of faith, but how many years had Abraham's faith been proven? We don't know how old Isaac was. I think we speculated one time as young as 12 and maybe as old as 30; 46 years maximum Abraham was faithful; he believed God, and he saw all that God had done.

Verse 8: "And Abraham said, 'My son, God will provide Himself a lamb for a burnt offering.' So, they both went on together. And they came to the place of which God had told him. And Abraham built an altar there and laid the wood in order. And he bound his son Isaac and laid him on the wood, upon the altar" (vs 8-9).

This is getting down to the last minute. Notice that it doesn't record any fight between

Abraham and Isaac. Isaac would have to have been convinced that he would have been raised from the dead, too, as well as Abraham being convinced that *if he did actually offer Isaac* that he would be raised from the dead, because God is a God of the living and not a God of the dead.

Verse 10: "And Abraham stretched out his hand and took the knife to slay his son." He had to have believed that as Heb. 11 brings out. Otherwise he wouldn't have done it. If he wouldn't have done it then he wouldn't have obeyed the voice of God.

Verse 11: "And the angel of the LORD called to him from the heavens and said, 'Abraham! Abraham!' And he said, 'Here I *am*.' And He said, 'Do not lay your hand upon the lad, nor do anything to him, **for now I know that you fear God...** [hold Him in awe] ...**seeing you have not withheld your son, your only son, from Me.**' And Abraham lifted up his eyes and looked. And, behold, behind *him* a ram was entangled in a thicket by its horns. And Abraham went and took the ram..." (vs 11-13). I think this was a special creation that God did. Just like Christ was a special creation to be sacrificed for us.

"...and offered it up for a burnt offering instead of his son. And Abraham called the name of that place The LORD Will Provide; so that it is said *until* this day, 'In the mount of the LORD it will be provided.' And the angel of the LORD called to Abraham out of heaven the second time, and said, '**By Myself have I sworn...**'" (vs 13-16). *This is something! When God swears by Himself, you can have no greater guarantee!*

In the first covenant in Gen. 15 you had the guarantee that God, Who would become man, would die. You have in Gen. 17 the covenant of circumcision, which also, when it comes down to Christ, He would be circumcised; He was circumcised the eighth day. That was fulfilled. *Now, you come to where God is going to give the irrevocable oath, where He swears by Himself!*

"...says the LORD, '**because you have done this thing, and have not withheld your son, your only son; that in blessing I will bless you, and in multiplying I will multiply your seed like the stars of the heavens...** [guaranteeing the spiritual sons] **...and as the sand, which is upon the seashore....** [guaranteeing the physical descendants to fulfill Gen 15 and 17] **...And your seed shall possess the gate of his enemies. And in your Seed...** [singular; a direct reference to Jesus Christ] **...shall all the nations of the earth be blessed, because you have obeyed My voice**'" (vs 16-18).

Many, many times, all the way through: **"...because you have obeyed My voice."** Now it

became irrevocable and comes down to where all the rest of it has to fulfill, and all of the other prophecies in the Old Testament continued narrowing down Who Christ would be: to the **one Seed**. To summarize:

- we have the *spiritual* seed, which are many
- we have the *physical* seed, which are many
- we have the *singular Seed*, which is Christ (v 18).

This is the verse which Paul refers to in Gal. 3. This was how many thousands of years before Christ? *Nearly 2000 years, which means 4000 years ago!*

Genesis 49—here's a promise that He was also going to be ruler. He was going to be king. *That is symbolized by the scepter.*

Gen. 49—a direct prophecy referring to Christ: "Judah is a lion's whelp. My son, you have gone up from the prey. He stooped, he crouched like a lion; and like a lioness, who shall rouse him? **The scepter shall not depart from Judah...**" (vs 9-10). The scepter is the kingship. Now it's beginning to bring in that the Messiah, the God/man, would become King.

"...nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come..." (v 10). Shiloh means: *Until He comes whose right it is for the scepter*. We will see that Jesus did fulfill that. That's why He's called 'King of kings and Lord of lords.'

"...And to Him shall be the obedience of the people" (v 10). He's going to gather all the people together. This has a direct reference to two things:

1. the resurrection, at His second coming
2. the gathering of Israel back out of dispersion, at His second coming

Verse 11 has something to do with the colt that He rode on: "Binding His foal to the vine, and His donkey's colt to the choice vine... [I don't fully understand this v 11, but I think it's very profound] ...He washed His garments in wine, and His clothes in the blood of grapes." The only thing this can refer to is Rev. 19:11-13 where His clothes were dipped in blood.

Verse 12: "His eyes are more sparkling than wine, and His teeth are whiter than milk." I believe this has an illusion to how His eyes would be just as He died on the cross. Obviously, with everything that He would have gone through His eyes would have been totally bloodshot, and the beating that He took. Have you ever seen an eye when it's bruised and the blood comes to it? I'm sure that when He was beaten in the face and the side of the head and

was scourged, that made His eyes that color. Indeed, it was a horrible, horrible thing that Jesus went through.

Just reading this overall, not knowing the New Testament, it would be pretty hard to pick up on all of this. That’s why God had to give special inspiration to the apostles. You start out with Matthew and you will read how many times it says:

- and to fulfill the Scripture which says...
- and to fulfill the saying of Isaiah which says...
- and to fulfill what the prophets have said...

and when Peter first spoke:

- and to fulfill what God said that He would not leave Christ’s soul in hell nor allow His Holy One to see corruption

God inspired them to *know* what these Scriptures were. Remember: *Christ opened their understanding to these Scriptures!* Just like with us, we can’t understand them unless we study them and God opens the understanding to us.

The thing that’s important to remember is that those things that are true, *God can inspire to every generation for people to understand!* What we’re covering may be new to us in some ways. I am convinced that wherever the people of God really were God revealed these things to them so that they would understand.

There were five sons of Judah. Two were killed because they were wicked. The third one was not counted in the line because he was one-half Canaanite, as were the first. Then God inspired a little trickery by Tamar who is supposed to be the wife to carry on the descendants of the sons of Judah. She set herself up as a prostitute along the way.

There was nothing evil in what she did, because God required that Judah give the youngest son—who was too young at the time of the death of the two older sons’ death—when he became of age, to Tamar to raise up seed unto his brother. That was the law that God gave. Since Judah did not do it, Tamar took it in her hand to do it her way to get it fulfilled.

Judah came along and thought that she was a harlot. She had her face all veiled and he couldn’t see who it was. He said, ‘Let me lay with you.’ She said, ‘What will you give me?’ He said, ‘I’ll give you a kid goat.’ She said, ‘How will I know that you’ll give me a kid goat? I need your pledge. Give me your signet, give me your staff, and I forget what the other thing was,’ she had three things. What are three things? *Three witnesses!*

Judah lay with her. She conceived and had Pharez and Zarah. Judah had to admit that it was he, indeed, so these were proper descendents of Judah. Zarah put his hand out first and the midwife put the red/scarlet thread on his wrist and said, ‘This one came out first,’ but he drew back and Pharez came out first. Pharez was actually the firstborn. *The scepter came down through Pharez until the time of Jeremiah.* Then it was overturned and taken.

After the Babylonian captivity, there is no king in the line of David coming down in the area of Judea, only governors. The scepter had been removed to Ireland and is today in England. *When Christ returns He is going to take the scepter, but the blood line had to come down to Jesus Christ through Pharez—Judah, Pharez.* We have it pretty well down:

- the seed of the woman
- Seth
- Noah
- Abraham
- Isaac
- Jacob
- Judah
- Pharez

and the scepter. This is narrowing it down so that when we come down to the true Messiah, it can only be one person: Jesus Christ! It cannot be any other one, because you cannot have all of these requirements be met by any more than one person. That’s important to understand. That’s the whole key to understanding the prophecies concerning Jesus Christ in the Old Testament. They all lead down to Christ and it cannot come to any other.

The line of Pharez of the house of David was pretty well extinguished, or at least not known of, after the destruction of Jerusalem; because all genealogical records were kept at the Temple and all the records were destroyed.

In Num. 23 God even used, in this case, a pagan prophet to prophecy of the Messiah. Can you believe that? *Balaam! This is interesting!* You would say, and rightly so, ‘Why would God use a false prophet to preach the Truth?’ *To show that in spite of what people want to do to the plan of God, they can’t turn it back! They must be forced to admit the truth!*

When I first read this I thought, ‘Why would God use Balaam to prophecy the Truth? *As a witness and testimony against him!*

You know what happened when Balak heard all these blessings; he was really ‘out of his gourd.’ He could hardly stand it any longer. ‘I hired you to curse!’ *Well, I told you that I can’t say anything that the Lord will not allow me to say.*

Numbers 23:18: "And he [Balaam] took up his parable and said, 'Rise up, Balak, and hear. Listen to me, son of Zippor. God is not a man that He should lie...' (vs 18-19). That's why God used Balaam, who was a liar, to preach the truth. God made him say the truth, though he was a liar.

"...neither the son of man that He should repent. Has He said, and shall He not do it? Or has He spoken, and shall He not fulfill it?" (v 19). Quite a lesson for all of us. Especially for those who say that the Word of God is not true. He's going to make it good.

Verse 20: "Behold, I have received word to bless. And He has blessed, and I cannot reverse it. **He has not seen iniquity in Jacob...**" (vs 20-21). This is a prophecy of *imputed righteousness*—note sermon: *The Two Righteousnesses*—the spiritual righteousness. Does not God impute to us the righteousness of Christ? *Yes, He does!* As God views us, if Satan comes up to us to make an accusation, what does Christ say? *There is no sin! Why? Because it's covered by Christ's sacrifice, the grace of God and the imputed righteousness to you!*

You look back at the history of what Israel was doing through the wilderness and how they provoked God. They did plenty of iniquity! God had to punish them for many things. This is a prophecy of the coming *imputed righteousness*.

"...neither has He seen perverseness in Israel. The LORD his God is with him, and the shout of a King among them" (v 21). They didn't have any king at the time they were in the wilderness, just before they were going into the 'promised land.' There was no king. When they got into the 'promised land' they didn't set up kings; they set up judges.

Verse 22: "God brought them out of Egypt. He has, as it were, the strength of an ox. Surely, *there is* no enchantment against Jacob, nor any divination against Israel. According to this time it shall be said of Jacob and of Israel, 'What God has worked!'" (vs 22-23). *That's quite a testimony!*

You stop and think that if God is going to take a false prophet like Balaam, who want to come and curse, and make him bless and make him tell the truth. How much more ought we not heed the words of the true prophets of God? Yet, people today accuse God of saying that the prophets didn't know what they were saying and their words are not true. *A bunch of nonsense!* What we have now is:

- God, Who is going to become a man
- Who is going to come through:
  - ✓ the line of Abraham
  - ✓ Isaac
  - ✓ Jacob

- ✓ Judah
- ✓ Pharez

- Who is going to be King

We're building quite a bit, here.

Numbers 24:3: "And he took up his parable, and said, 'Balaam the son of Beor has said, and the man whose eyes are open has said; He has said; he who heard the words of God, who saw the vision of the Almighty, falling down but having his eyes open'" (vs 3-4). Balak is standing there watching Balaam do this. He watches Balaam go into a trance and his eyes are open. I think God has a little sense of humor in this, too.

Verse 5: "How goodly are your tents, O Jacob, your tabernacles, O Israel! They are spread forth like the valleys, like gardens by the river's side, like trees of aloes which the LORD has planted, like cedar trees beside the waters. He shall pour the water out of his buckets, and his seed shall be in many waters. And his king shall be higher than Agag, and his kingdom shall be exalted" (vs 5-7).

Agag had the office of what we know today as the pope (book of Esther). Agag was the son of Hammedatha, the Amalekite, and he was the religious pope in Persia. That was the highest, exalted, post of all. He's saying right here that his King, being Christ, shall be higher than Agag and His kingdom shall be exalted in the coming Millennium.

Verse 8: "God brought him forth out of Egypt..." This refers to Israel, but did not Christ go into Egypt? *Yes He did!* And was brought forth out of Egypt.

"...He has as it were the strength of an ox. He shall eat up the nations *and* his enemies... [that's what Christ is going to do when He returns] ...and shall break their bones, and pierce them through *with* his arrows." *'In righteousness does He judge and make war'* (Rev. 19).

Verse 9: "He crouched. He lay down as a lion, and as a great lion. Who shall stir him up? Blessed is he who blesses you, and cursed is he who curses you.' And Balak's anger was kindled against Balaam..." (vs 9-10).

So, he took up the fourth parable. Verse 15: "And he took up his parable, and said, 'Balaam, the son of Beor, has said, and the man whose eyes are open has said; He has said, he who heard the words of God and knew the knowledge of the Most High, who sees the vision of the Almighty, falling down but having his eyes open: I shall see Him, but not now. I shall behold Him, but not near. **There shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Scepter shall rise out of Israel**... [referring to the Scepter, which would be to Christ] ...and shall smash the corners of

Moab, and destroy all the sons of tumult. And Edom shall be a possession. Seir also shall be a possession for his enemies. And Israel shall do valiantly. Out of Jacob shall come He Who shall have dominion and shall destroy him who remains of the city” (vs 15-19).

Who is He going to destroy? What city? *I just have a hunch that’s Babylon!* Is Christ not going to destroy Babylon the Great? *Yes, He is!* We’re getting into His second coming, here. Some of these things kind of flow together. We have:

- King
  - Lawgiver
  - Redeemer
  - Intercessor
  - He’s got to be of the seed:
    - ✓ of the woman
    - ✓ of Abraham
    - ✓ of Isaac
    - ✓ of Jacob
    - ✓ of Judah
    - ✓ of Pharez
  - He’s got to be a God become man
  - He’s got to be King
- we’re going to see now that He’s got to be
- Prophet

Deut. 18 is a direct prophecy concerning Christ. There are some pretty profound things that are said here. I go through and show the New Testament fulfillment of this prophecy in the sermon *That Prophet*. Let’s review what happened.

God brought all of Israel to Mt. Sinai and He spoke the Ten Commandments. The trumpets were waxing loud, the thunder, lightening and all the darkness, and God spoke and it just pierced everything all around. What did the people say? ‘Oh, don’t let us hear the voice of God lest we die! Moses, you speak to us and all that God says we’ll do!’ God is taking them up on that word and He’s going to show them that He’s going to do one better, by this prophecy

Deuteronomy 18:15: “The LORD your God will raise up unto you a Prophet from the midst of you, of your brethren, One like me. **To Him you shall hearken.**” Whenever you read the word, ‘hearken,’ that means: *you will listen with understanding!* What’s going to happen if you don’t bow the knee to Christ? *It’s history!* ‘You shall hearken.’

“...**One like me....**” What was Moses? *Moses was lawgiver!* Was Christ also a Lawgiver? *Yes, He was!* (Matt. 5-7) All of His words and commandments are lawgiving. Moses saw God face-to-face. We’re going to see that that’s how Jesus was

taught, by vision directly from God. He was never taught in the schools of Judaism.

Let’s notice something else. Moses was a physical man; so, this is also a prophecy that it will be a physical man. We know from the other prophecies that *it has to be God become man*.

Verse 16<sup>[transcriber’s correction]</sup>: “According to all that you desired of the LORD your God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, ‘Let me not hear again the voice of the LORD my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, so that I do not die.’ And the LORD said to me, “They have spoken well what they have spoken.... [here is how He is going to answer it]: **...I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, [human being] One like you, and will put My words in His mouth....** [Didn’t we just read that in John 12 when we started out?] **...And He shall speak to them all that I shall command Him**” (vs 16-18).

Between vs 18 and 19 you have this thought: ‘Since you people of Israel did not want Me to talk to you but a man to talk to you, I’m going to send you a man.’

Verse 19: “And it shall come to pass... [since you desire a man instead of God] ...whatever man will not hearken to My words which He shall speak in My name, I will require *it* of him.” That’s getting pretty strong. You think about it.

Just as an aside: I think it’s interesting that the series on *God Hates Religion* kind of parallels with this, we can see more and more that this is not a religious thing. This a covenant thing that God is talking about—‘I will require it of him.’ Didn’t Jesus say, ‘The words that I speak—if he rejects me—will judge him.’?

Notice, for all preachers and teachers, please listen—especially for those who love to appoint themselves: Let me clarify something where it talks about in Heb. 5 where the time comes that ‘you ought to be teachers.’ That doesn’t mean you set yourself up as a teacher. If there is going to be public teaching by anybody, then it’s going to be recognized and a proper ordination will take place. That means any one of you, knowing the Word of God, can sit down with anyone else, being his neighbor, and open the Bible, and on a one-to-one basis you can teach that person. That is not appointing yourself as a teacher.

A prophet or a teacher actually can mean the one who is to bring the Word of God or inspired speaking in the New Testament. In this case it includes all prophets, true and false.

Verse 20: “But the prophet who shall presume to speak a word in My name which I have

not commanded him to speak or who shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die.” That includes everyone who comes claiming that they were sent from God but weren’t.

There’s only one case we know of, a stealth ordination. *No such thing!* There is a stealth god, and that stealth god is Satan. He doesn’t want anyone to know that he really thinks that he is god. That’s why they have the stages of illumination before you get into direct contact with the stealth god. Whereas, the *true* God has it that you can have contact with Him by simply falling on your knees and praying to Him, because He is the *real* God.

When it comes down to those who preach and teach, *they have to teach the Words of God.* Nothing else is going to do. Nothing else is going to fulfill what God wants. If we don’t preach the true Words of God, God is going to judge us for it. Also, this comes down and it is saying here, that ***the Prophet that God will send will speak the Words of God*** (John 3:34). You see how the whole Bible ties together?

There are many very profound and important prophecies concerning Christ in the Old Testament. They are very, very specific and *they can lead to only one, **Jesus Christ of Nazareth!***

- Hebrews 11
- Galatians 3
- Revelation 19:11-13
- Esther
- Matthew 5-7
- Hebrews 5
- John 3:34

Also referenced:

Book: *The Christian Passover* by Fred R. Coulter

Sermons:

- *The Tabernacle of David*
- *The Key of David*
- *The Two Righteousnesses*
- *That Prophet*

Sermon Series:

- *The Covenants of God*
- *God Hates Religion*

FRC:nfs  
Transcribed:12-17-14  
Proofed: bo—12-22-14

All Scripture from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter.

Scriptural References:

- 1) Genesis 12:1-4
- 2) Luke 14:26-28
- 3) John 12:47-50
- 4) Genesis 12:4
- 5) Genesis 15:4-18
- 6) Galatians 3:14-16
- 7) Genesis 17:1-17, 19, 18-22
- 8) Genesis 22:1-18
- 9) Genesis 49:9-12
- 10) Numbers 23:18-23
- 11) Numbers 24:3-10, 15-19
- 12) Deuteronomy 18:15-20

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Psalms 22-24; 69; 110
- Daniel 12:3-4
- Matthew 13:43
- 1-John 3:1-3
- Revelation 1:13-20
- John 14-17
- Romans 4
- Exodus 12:40-41
- Romans 6

## Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament III In the Law & the Prophets

Fred R. Coulter

I have taken a great deal of this material that I have from a man named Arnold Fruchtenbaum. He is a German Jew who grew up in Russia and his specialty is ministering to Jewish non-believers in Christ by using the Old Testament.

I've received some of his other materials. This by far is his best material. I have some of his material on Rev. and he's off there. He's got one foot in with the Protestants with the rapture and the trinity. He has the other foot in Judaism with the Father and the Son. He believes in the rapture and the Gentiles can keep Christmas, Easter, New Years, and all that.

I asked, 'Does he keep the Passover on the 14<sup>th</sup> or the 15<sup>th</sup>?' The secretary who answered, missed the question and said, 'He'll be traveling to Lithuania at that time.' I just said to myself, 'Nope, that won't do any good. I won't push the point at all.'

I will say this, what he has with the prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament is excellent. Some of the other things vary in quality. I think it's clear that once you're dealing with a Jew, *you're dealing with a Jew* and that's the way it is.

I need to make something very clear, which will save us a lot of anguish. In Worldwide (Church of God) we viewed Jews as just like us and all they needed was Christ. *That is not true whatsoever!* They are more pagan than the Catholics, while they have retained the knowledge of the Holy Days.

The Scripture says, 'To the Jew first and then to the Gentiles.' I've learned something very important, which is that in preaching the Gospel it went first to the Jews and then to the Gentiles. That does not say the Jew is superior. That doesn't say that the Jew is first in knowledge; because I found that many of the writings that Arnold Fruchtenbaum has, which are good, are very lacking in knowledge.

All knowledge comes from God. So, there will be those who are considered by Jews to be Gentiles, who will have a superior knowledge of the Bible than the Jew, of which one I view that William Tyndale would certainly be one of them.

### Prophecies in the Law:

We've come, in this series, to the last one in the Law. Let's see how Jesus had to open the eyes of the disciples concerning himself in the Law, the Prophets and the Psalms.

Jesus is talking to the two that He was walking with to the village of Emmaus, Luke 24:25: "Then He said to them, 'O foolish and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken! Was it not necessary for the Christ to suffer these things, and to enter into His glory?' **And beginning with Moses, and from all the prophets, He interpreted to them the things concerning Himself in all the Scriptures**" (vs 25-27).

This is when Christ miraculously appeared to the disciples, v 44: "And He said to them, 'These *are* the words that I spoke to you when I was yet with you, that all *the* things which were written concerning Me in **the Law of Moses and in the Prophets and in the Psalms must be fulfilled.**' **Then He opened their minds to understand the Scriptures**" (vs 44-45). This is a very important principal to understand. *If you understand the Scriptures, God has opened your mind to understand it!*

No one comes to the Father except through Christ, and no one comes to Christ except the Father draw him, and you can't understand the Scriptures unless God opens your mind. If you understand the Scriptures, thank God for the understanding that you have. Ask Him to help you grow more in the understanding of it, like He did with the apostles. After all the years that He was preaching—3½ years with them—He still had to do this.

Verse 46: "And said to them, 'According as it is written, it was necessary for the Christ to suffer, and to rise from *the* dead the third day. And in His name, repentance and remission of sins should be preached to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem'" (vs 46-47).

We have come to the point now, the last part in the Law, which I'm going to review. Deut. 18 becomes a very, very, important focal chapter that we need to understand concerning the prophecies of Christ in the Old Testament. We have seen that Christ was to be of:

- the seed of the woman
- the seed of Abraham
- the seed of Judah

We have seen that the prophecy showed that:

- He was to be man and God or a man/God
- He is going to be King and Prophet
- He is going to be Priest
- He is going to come of the virgin birth

Deuteronomy 18:15: “The LORD your God will raise up unto you **a Prophet** from the midst of you, of your brethren, **One like me...**” It’s very important that Moses says, “...One like me...” because we will see the things that Moses really was. Moses was the greatest prophet until John the Baptist. As far as Moses being the prophet that really saw God, he is the one.

“...To Him you shall hearken” (v 15). This means that you must listen to Him. The implication was that you—meaning Israel—didn’t listen to Me; rather, they wanted Moses to speak to them.

Verse 16: “According to all that you desired of the LORD your God in Horeb in the day of the assembly... [when the Ten Commandments were given] ...saying, ‘**Let me not hear again the voice of the LORD my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, so that I do not die.**’ And the LORD said to me, ‘They have spoken well what they have spoken’” (vs 16-17).

God’s answer to Israel was not just Moses. **God’s answer was Christ! That’s what’s so profound!** How many years did it take for Christ to come after this prophecy was spoken?

Verse 18: “I will raise them up **a Prophet** from among their brethren, **One like you, and will put My words in His mouth.** And He shall speak to them all that I shall command Him. And it shall come to pass, whatever man will not hearken to My words which He shall speak in My name, I will require *it* of him. But the prophet who shall presume to speak a word in My name which I have not commanded him to speak or who shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die” (vs 18-20).

Everyone who’s going to preach and teach needs to read this and let it sink deep in their ears and in their heart. *Woe be to anyone who doesn’t teach or preach the Word of God!* If the Word of God is the greatest, which it is, and if it’s what God spoke to us, which He did, then what greater thing can be preached than His Word? Did not Jesus preach the Words of God? *We’ll see that, yes, He did!* There are four things that Moses was:

### 1. **A Prophet:**

He was a prophet, which in many instances is called a ‘prophet par excellence,’ meaning: *there was none other like him.* He excelled above all other prophets. We’ll see why.

Numbers 12:1: “And Miriam and Aaron spoke against Moses because of the Cushite woman whom he had taken...” If you read *The Works of Flavius Josephus*, you’ll understand that this was an arranged marriage because of an alliance between

Ethiopia and Egypt while Moses was general and potential Pharaoh in Egypt. He had not put her away. He was taking care of her the way that he should have because he was married to her and responsible for her.

“...for he had taken a Cushite woman. And they said, ‘Has the LORD indeed spoken only by Moses?...’” (vs 1-2). This is the thing that you could say of other ministers and other prophets, but you can’t say of Moses. What is the saying in the New Testament? *Those who compare themselves among themselves are not wise!* Miriam and Aaron were looking at Moses and kind of thinking to themselves, ‘We’re just as good as Moses.’ *God let them know pretty quick!*

“...Has He not also spoken by us?” And the LORD heard *it*. (Now, the man Moses *was* very meek, more than all the men on the face of the earth.)” (vs 2-3). Moses didn’t write that in. That is an editorial comment that was put in there, probably by Ezra.

Verse 4: “And the LORD spoke suddenly to Moses and to Aaron and to Miriam, ‘You three come out to the tabernacle of the congregation.’ And the three came out. And the LORD came down in the pillar of the cloud and stood *in* the door of the tabernacle, and called Aaron and Miriam. And they both came forward” (vs 4-5). *This is what you call really being ‘hailed on the carpet!’ Not just the boss, but to the Boss—God!*

Verse 6: “And He said, ‘**Hear now My words. If there is a prophet among you, I the LORD will make Myself known to him in a vision, and will speak to him in a dream.**’” That’s what happened to all the other prophets. You read about Jeremiah, Isaiah, Ezekiel, Amos and all of them; God spoke to them in a dream or a vision.

Verse 7: “Not so with My servant Moses. He *is* faithful in all My house. **I will speak with him mouth to mouth...** [face to face] ...even clearly, and not in dark speeches. And he shall behold the likeness of the LORD. Why then were you not afraid to speak against My servant Moses?” (vs 7-8). So, #1 Moses was ‘*the* prophet.’ That’s going to refer to Christ, as we will see in a little bit, as ***the Prophet.***

### 2. **Type of Redeemer:**

Moses was a type of redeemer, Exodus 3:7: “And the LORD said, ‘I have surely seen the affliction of My people who *are* in Egypt. I have heard their cry because of their taskmasters, for I know their sorrows. And I am coming down to deliver them out of the hand of the Egyptians, to bring them up out of that land, to a good land, a large land, to a land flowing *with* milk and honey, to the place of the Canaanites and the Hittites and the

Amorites and the Perizzites and the Hivites and the Jebusites. And now, behold, the cry of the children of Israel has come to Me. And I have also seen the oppression *with* which the Egyptians oppress them. **And now go, and I will send you to Pharaoh that you may bring forth My people, the children of Israel, out of Egypt**” (vs 7-10).

Moses was a redeemer; he was sent to redeem Israel out of slavery. We’re going to see that all of these apply also to Christ.

### 3. **A Mediator:**

Moses was a mediator between God and man, the people. Exodus 20:18 “And all the people saw the thunderings, and the lightnings, and the sound of the trumpet, and the mountain smoking. **And when the people saw, they trembled and stood afar off. And they said to Moses, ‘You speak with us, and we will hear. But let not God speak with us, lest we die’**” (vs 18-19). That’s what Moses did—*sole mediator*. How many times did he go up and down the mountain, speak to the people and go up in the mountain, get instructions and come back down?

### 4. **Intercessor:**

I think this is quite profound. We know that Christ intercedes for us. He’s our Intercessor; He’s our Mediator, *There’s only one Mediator* between man and God and that is the man Christ. *There’s only one Redeemer* and that is Christ. We’ll see about ***the Prophet***, in a bit. We know that Christ is Intercessor for us, making intercession. That’s also through the power of the Holy Spirit.

Exodus 32 is when Moses went up on the mountain and the people just couldn’t stand it. He didn’t come back when they expected and they didn’t know what happened to him. Aaron made the golden calf. I always liked his excuse when Moses came back and said, ‘What happened?’ Aaron said, ‘We threw the gold into the fire and out leaped this calf.’ A good lesson. People want their ‘religion’; *they don’t want God!* Very good to remember.

Exodus 32:7: “And the LORD said to Moses, ‘Go! Get you down, for your people, whom you brought out of the land of Egypt...’” Every time the people sin, they’re Moses’ people. Every time they do well, they’re God’s people.

“...have corrupted *themselves*. They have turned aside quickly out of the way, which I commanded them. They have made them a molten calf, and have worshiped it, and have sacrificed to it, and said, “These *are* your gods, O Israel, who have brought you up out of the land of Egypt.” And the LORD said to Moses, ‘I have seen this people, and behold, it *is* a stiff-necked people. And now leave

Me alone, so that My wrath may burn hot against them and that I may consume them. And I will make of you a great nation” (vs 7-10). *I tell you, they really provoked God!*

Here is Moses as an *intercessor*: Verse 11: **“And Moses prayed to the LORD his God, and said, ‘LORD, why does Your wrath burn hot against Your people...’**” What this does is show that God can be reasoned with. *Remember that!*

Isaiah 1:18<sup>[transcriber’s correction]</sup>: “‘Come now, and let us reason together,’ says the LORD....” You can reason with God, *if* you’re willing and obedient.

Exodus 32:11: “...whom You have brought forth out of the land of Egypt with great power and with a mighty hand? Why should the Egyptians speak and say, “He brought them out with an evil intent, to kill them in the mountains and to consume them from the face of the earth”?... [Moses really talked straight to God and said, ‘What are all the nations going to think?’] ...Turn from Your fierce wrath, and repent of this evil against Your people. Remember Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, Your servants, to whom You swore by Your own self...” (vs 11-13). That was a powerful oath that God gave in Gen. 22. God said, ‘By myself I swear and in blessing I will bless, and in multiplying I will multiply.’

The moral of this story is that when you are in deep ‘skubalon’—which is Greek for *dung*—and it’s kind of like Jeremiah and it’s sucking you down and you’re thinking, ‘O God, how am I going to get out of this?’ Remember Abraham, Isaac and Jacob (Israel), because God swore to them in an *irrevocable oath*. That’s what Moses did here.

“...and said to them, “I will multiply your seed as the stars of the heavens, and all this land that I have spoken of will I give to your seed, and they shall inherit *it* forever.” And the LORD repented of the evil, which He spoke of doing to His people” (vs 13-14). We need to think of that in relationship to some of the brethren we know.

Verse 15: “And Moses turned, and went down from the mountain, and the two tablets of the testimony *were* in his hand: the tablets were written on both their sides; on the one side and on the other. And the tablets *were* the work of God, and the writing *was* the writing of God. It *was* engraved upon the tablets. And Joshua heard the voice of the people in their shouting. And he said to Moses, ‘A sound of war in the camp!’ And he said, ‘*It is* not a sound of a cry of victory, nor a sound of the cry of defeat. I *am* hearing the sound of singing” (vs 15-18). What they had was a big public orgy of sex worship right in front of the golden calf.

Verse 19: “And it came to pass, as soon as he came near to the camp and saw the calf and

dancing, then Moses' anger burned hot, and he threw the tablets out of his hands, and broke them at the bottom of the mountain. And he took the calf, which they had made and burned *it* in the fire, and pulverized *it* to powder, and scattered *it* upon the water, and made the children of Israel drink *of it*. And Moses said to Aaron, 'What did this people do to you that you have brought so great a sin upon them?' And Aaron said, 'Let not the anger of my lord burn hot. You know the people, that **they are set on mischief...**'" (vs 19-22).

*That is a big sin of licentiousness that many ministers do today!* 'Oh, you know this people. They don't like all these hard rules. You've got to make it easy and soft for them.' That was Aaron's attitude.

Verse 23: "For they said to me, 'Make us gods who shall go before us; as for this Moses, the man that brought us up out of the land of Egypt, we do not know what has become of him.'" And I said to them, "Whoever has any gold, let them break *it* off." And they gave it to me, and I threw it into the fire, and there came out this calf.' And when Moses saw that the people were naked (for Aaron had made them naked to *their* shame among their enemies)" (vs 23-25). You're not out there naked, sunbathing in the middle of the Sinai Desert.

Verse 26: "Then Moses stood in the gate of the camp and said, 'Who *is* on the LORD'S side? *Come* to me.' And all the sons of Levi gathered themselves to him. And he said to them, 'Thus says the LORD God of Israel, "Each man put his sword by his side, and go in and out from gate to gate throughout the camp, and kill each one his brother, and each one his companion, and each one his neighbor.'" And the sons of Levi did according to the word of Moses. And there fell of the people that day about three thousand men; for Moses had said, 'Consecrate yourselves today to the LORD—even though it has been at the cost of a son or a brother—in order that *He* may give you a blessing today.' And it came to pass on the next day, Moses said to the people, 'You have sinned a great sin. And now I will go up to the LORD. Perhaps I shall make an atonement for your sin'" (vs 26-30).

Pay very close attention to what was done here, v 31: "**And Moses returned to the LORD, and said, 'Oh, these people have sinned a great sin, and have made themselves gods of gold! And now if You would only forgive their sin!.... [it doesn't tell us what he was bargaining with] ...And if not, I pray You, blot me out of Your book which You have written'"**" (vs 31-32).

*Moses was willing to give his life for the children of Israel!* This never really dawned on me until I was preparing for this sermon. Christ willingly gave His life for our sins. In this sense, as

an **intercessor**, Moses gave his life for us; Moses was willing to do that.

Verse 33: "And the LORD said to Moses, 'Whoever has sinned against Me, I will blot him out of My book. And now go, lead the people to *the* place of which I have spoken to you. Behold, My angel shall go before you. And in the day of My visitation I will visit their sin upon them.' And the LORD plagued the people because they made the calf, which Aaron made" (vs 33-35). *Moses was: prophet, redeemer, mediator, and intercessor!*

### **That Prophet:**

I want to focus in on the aspect of *That Prophet* {note sermon: *That Prophet*}, concerning that the people and the religious leaders knew Who Christ was.

John 1:19: "And this is the testimony of John... [the Baptist] ...when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, 'Who are you?'" This was an official visit. This was like a committee of congressmen sent from Washington, D.C., to investigate 'this here happening' out in Galilee, or in this case, down in the Jordan River. "...Who are you?"

- Why would the Jews do that?
  - ✓ they knew that this was something very important
  - ✓ they knew that this had to be something from God
- Why didn't they just send the merchants down to find out?

*No, they sent the priests and the Levites!*

Verse 20: "Then he *freely* admitted, and did not deny, but declared, '**I am not the Christ**'.... [John knew he was not the Messiah] ...And they asked him, 'Then who *are* you? Are you Elijah?'... [Jesus said that John was Elijah] ...And he said, 'I am not.'..." (vs 20-21). It's interesting that John didn't know. All of those who want to proclaim themselves to be Elijah, *you can be guaranteed that you're not the one*; because John the Baptist was told of by Jesus, 'This is Elijah if you are willing to hear it,' John didn't know that he was.

"...Then they asked, 'Are you **the Prophet?**'" (vs 21). Referring to:

Deuteronomy 18:15: "The LORD your God will raise up unto you a Prophet from the midst of you, of your brethren, One like me. To Him you shall hearken."

John 19:21: "...And he answered, 'No.' Therefore, they said to him, 'Who are you? What do you say about yourself so that we may give an answer to those who sent us?'" (vs 21-22) That's why we know it was an official delegation coming down.

Verse 23: “He said, ‘I *am* a voice crying in the wilderness, “Make straight the way of *the* Lord,” as Isaiah the prophet said.’ Now, those who had been sent belonged to *the sect* of the Pharisees, and they asked him... [this was really an intense interrogation] ...saying to him, ‘Why then are you baptizing, if you are not the Christ, nor Elijah, nor **the Prophet?**’” (vs 23-25). They understood that there would be baptism when *the Christ* would come, when *the Prophet* would come. Then John gave his answer. John 12 ties right in very carefully with what the prophecy in Deut. 18 told us.

John 12:42: “But even so, many among the rulers believed in Him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *Him*... [confess Him publicly] ...so that they would not be put out of the synagogue; for they loved the glory of men more than the glory of God” (vs 42-43). A little politics in the little ole synagogue. Something we’re all familiar with.

Verse 44: “Then Jesus called out and said, ‘**The one who believes in Me does not believe in Me, but in Him Who sent Me.**’” What we need to understand is the humility of Christ. Here was the Creator of everything that was ever made:

- Who had divested Himself to becoming a human being
- Who took on the form of a man
- Who was subject to sin and death, though He never sinned

What did He say? He didn’t say, ‘*You dummies! You ought to recognize Who I am!*’ No! He gave all honor to the Father.

Verse 45: “And the one who sees Me sees Him Who sent Me.... [He was the ‘spitting image’ of the Father] ...I have come *as* a light into the world so that everyone who believes in Me may not remain in darkness. But if anyone hears My words and does not believe, I do not judge him; for I did not come to judge the world, but to save the world. The one who rejects Me and does not receive My words has one who judges him; the word which I have spoken, that shall judge him in the last day” (vs 46-48). Even there He didn’t take any credit to Himself, but the words recorded right here will judge you.

Verse 49: “For I have not spoken from Myself; **but the Father, Who sent Me, gave Me commandment Himself, what I should say and what I should speak.**” Christ didn’t speak anything other than what the Father commanded Him to speak. *That’s quite profound!* That’s why, when we get into teaching and preaching, that it needs to be the Word of God which is taught and preached, so that all are edified—*built up*:

- built up in Christ
- built up in the grace and knowledge of God
- built up in salvation, so that you have:
  - ✓ faith
  - ✓ belief
  - ✓ truth

That’s what it’s all for.

Verse 50: “And I know that His commandment is eternal life. Therefore, **whatever I speak, I speak exactly as the Father has told Me.**” There wasn’t one word that He did on His own.

Even John the Baptist understood that. *This is a good test. This is how you test all prophets, all teachers and all preachers.* Just back off and give yourself a little space. Ask God to help you understand the Truth. You’ll ‘know them by their fruits.’

Here’s what John the Baptist said, speaking of Christ: John 3:31: “‘He Who comes from above is above all. The one who is of the earth is earthly, and speaks of the earth. He Who comes from heaven is above all; and what He has seen and heard, this is *what* He testifies; but no one receives His testimony. **The one who has received His testimony has set his seal that God is true**’” (vs 31-33). Anyone who is going to speak the Word of God is going to cause you to believe in God; that is true and God is true.

Verse 34: “**For He Whom God has sent speaks the words of God**... [just as Christ and here he’s referring to Christ] ...and God gives not the Spirit by measure *unto Him*. The Father loves the Son and has given all things into His hand. The one who believes in the Son has everlasting life; but the one who does not obey the Son shall not see life, for the wrath of God remains on him” (vs 34-36).

Look at the example of Christ. What did He do ‘*of Himself*’? This is very important when it’s in the Greek. The Greek word for *of* is ‘ek’ and really means *from*. If it is *of* in the sense of possessive, then it is in the tentative case. This is ‘ek’—*out from within Me*. That is referring to His own flesh.

This is very important for us to understand. Not only when we are searching doctrine to understand the Truth so that we don’t come up with ‘way out’ doctrines, which lead people astray; or when someone is teaching and preaching that they do anything of their own.

That’s why I have my cowbell and I ring it when speculating. I don’t do it in comedy or jest, though it started out that way. I do it so that you will know that *if I give you my opinion* it’s something we can all think on, but it’s nothing we are going to incorporate as doctrine. I don’t want to do anything

*of myself. I can't create any doctrines any better than what God has already put in the Bible!* So, when it says:

John 5:19: "Therefore, Jesus answered and said to them, 'Truly, truly I say to you, the Son has no power to do anything **of** Himself... ['ek': *out from Himself*] ...but only what He sees the Father do. For whatever He does, these things the Son also does in the same manner.'" What He heard and saw is what He did.

Verse 30: "**I have no power to do anything of Myself...**"—"ek." I can do nothing *out from Me*. Why? *Like any other human being, He could do anything!* Why? *If He did anything on His own, it would have been sin!* Likewise, in teaching the Word of God, if we come up with something on our own—*out from within* our little 'pea brains'—then we are going against the will of God and we are sinning.

Now you understand why so many of these prophecies you've heard about in times past relating to the Church: i.e.: 1972, 1975, going to a place of safety and all of those things. Those of you who are new have never heard of it, that's the same thing as the Seventh Day Adventist in 1844 in cleansing the temple in heaven above.

Like I told a Seventh Day Adventist, I said, 'I don't read anywhere in the Bible where God's throne was ever in need of cleansing, because God is Holy, true, and righteous and there's no sin there. So, why don't you just flat admit you were wrong with your prophecy and repent?' That's what we need to do with any prophecies that we are wrong in. Just flat out admit it and just say it's wrong. It was a mistake. 'I said something that wasn't right. God forgive me.' *He will!*

Verse 30: "I have no power to do anything **of Myself**, but as I hear, I judge; and My judgment is just because I do not seek My own will..." It says that teachers are not to be self-willed. That means self-willed *to do their own will* in spite of the will of God.

"...but the will of the Father, Who sent Me. **If I bear witness of Myself, My testimony is not true....** [You see how that applies to all of us?] ...There is another who bears witness of Me, and I know that the testimony that he witnesses concerning Me is true. You have sent to John, and he has borne witness to the Truth. Now, I do not receive witness from man, but **I say these things so that you may be saved**" (vs 30-34). Christ is virtually telling them that it really doesn't matter who you are:

- scribes
- Pharisees

- priests
- what office you hold

I'm not going to take any testimony from you or receive it.

Verse 35: "He was a burning and shining light, and you were willing for a time to rejoice in his light.... [that you may increase in your own power] ...But I have a greater witness than John's; for the works that the Father gave Me to complete, the *very* works that I am doing, themselves bear witness of Me, that the Father has sent Me.... [this was astonishing to these Jews] ...And the Father Himself, Who sent Me, has borne witness of Me. **You have neither heard His voice nor seen His form at any time. And you do not have His Word dwelling in you...**" (vs 35-38).

Isn't that something? He's telling those who handle the law, they didn't know the law. Those who had the Word of God, didn't have it in them. That's why it's so important. What is it for the New Covenant with us that God is going to do? *Inscribe His Law in our minds and in our hearts so that it is in us!* That's the whole point of it. That's why it takes the Spirit of God to do it. That's why we can't do it ourselves.

Verse 38: "And you do not have His Word dwelling in you, for **you do not believe Him Whom He has sent**. You search the Scriptures..." (vs 38-39). He said that lots of times: '...have you never read?' Just like today, lot of people have the Bible, but have you ever read it?

Verse 39: "You search the Scriptures, for in them you think that you have eternal life; and they are the ones that testify of Me." The same way today. There are a lot of people who carry around the Bible and quote the Bible. It has the Words of eternal life, but they don't have a clue as to what it says.

Verse 40: "But you are unwilling to come to Me, that you may have life. I do not receive glory from men" (vs 40-41). They were coming to give honor to Him but He was not going to take that honor; because if He did, He would sin. Because He wouldn't take the honor but rejected it, they wouldn't come to Him to receive life either. So, they pushed themselves away from God.

This is a key verse: Verse 42: "**But I have known you...** [*Did He know!*] ...**that you do not have the love of God in yourselves...** [Isn't that something?] ...I have come in My Father's name, and you do not receive Me; *but* if another comes in his own name, you will receive him.... [Yes, indeed!] ...How are you able to believe, you who receive glory from one another, and do not seek the glory that *comes* from the only God?" (vs 42-44).

*Because you're a bunch of political, religious, creeps!*

(go to the next track)

Verse 45: "Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father. There is *one* who accuses you, *even* Moses, in whom you have hope. But if you believed Moses... [that Christ was **that Prophet!**] ...you would have believed Me; for he wrote about Me. And if you do not believe his writings, how shall you believe My words?" (vs 45-47). *Isn't that something!* It's also telling us today, ***you cannot believe the Gospel or the Words of Christ unless you believe the words of Moses.***

We're going to go from the Law into the Prophets to see some more prophecies concerning Jesus Christ. What we need to understand is that in spite of all the claims of men, in spite of all their twisting and turning—William Tyndale calls them 'juggling'—of the Scriptures, they're 'jugglers' of the Word. Which is a really good powerful phrase.

Heb. 6 is very important for us to realize and understand; because we are living in a day when Satan is trying to take away—word by word, step by step—the Truth of God, and the faith of people by confusing arguments and upside-down reasoning of those who 'juggle' the Scriptures.

If you want to know what William Tyndale thought about the philosophers and the sophists of his day, he excoriated them. He said that what they did was ruined everyone's mind before they could study the Scriptures by having them study Plato, Aristotle and all of the philosophies before you 'deign to view the Word of God.' That's what most theologians in the world do, because they don't believe God. The important thing is ***to believe God and believe His Word!***

- Is God all powerful? *Yes!*
- Is God almighty? *Yes*
- Is God true? *Yes!*

We have seen how many times that everything goes back to Gen. 15 and 22, referring to Abraham. If you have any doubt between Gen. 1 and 22—that there may be some things in there that are not true—then you have to say that from Gen. 22 through the rest of the Bible that all the rest has got to be true. There may be some problems in translation.

Hebrews 6:13: "**For God, after promising Abraham, swore by Himself, since He could swear by none greater.**" That was a profound thing for God to do because:

1. God always tells the Truth
2. His Word is sure
3. it's going to come to pass

All God has to do is say it and it will be. All He did to create the earth and the heavens was speak it. He said, 'Let there be light.' Guess what? *There was light!* Separate the day from the night, and there was day and night right on down through all the six days with the creation of man, with Adam and Eve.

There's only one place in the Bible that God swore by Himself and that's Gen. 22. All the other places it talks about: the Word of the Lord has said it; 'thus says the Lord.' But nowhere does it say, "**in swearing, I swear by Myself.**"

Verse 14: "Saying, 'Surely in blessing I will bless you, and in multiplying I will multiply you.'" Contrary to all the theologians, there has got to be the children of Israel in this world today, and there are.

Verse 15: "Now, after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise. For indeed, men swear by the greater, and confirmation by an oath *puts* an end to all disputes between them. In this way **God, desiring more abundantly to show the heirs of the promise the unchangeable nature of His own purpose, confirmed it by an oath; so that by two immutable things...**" (vs 15-18). What are the two immutable things?

1. God, because He can't change!
2. His Word, because it is Truth!

**"...in which it was impossible for God to lie,** we... [today, for us] ...who have fled for refuge might have strong encouragement to lay hold on the hope *that has been* set before us; which *hope* we have as an anchor of the soul, both secure and steadfast, and which enters into the *sanctuary* within the veil; where Jesus has entered for us *as* a forerunner, having become a High Priest forever according to the order of Melchisedec" (vs 18-20).

The whole Bible is based upon the Word of God and the whole New Testament is based upon the life, death and resurrection of Jesus Christ, which is by the Word of God and by the prophecies that He gave. To the contrary, all of men's theology, all of men's educated ideas, ***if they reject the Word of God, they reject God*** and that's just the way that it is.

They've tried to do it with the prophecies concerning Jesus. If they can debunk the virgin birth, then there's no case for Christ; but God's Word is True and there was a virgin birth. It was prophesied.

### **Prophecies in the 'Prophets':**

Isaiah 7:1: "And it came to pass in the days of Ahaz the son of Jotham, the son of Uzziah, king of Judah..." Go back and read and study about King Ahaz. He was one of the more wicked kings.

Perhaps, maybe even in some ways, worse than Manasseh.

Manasseh was really a wicked king and for 55 years he did all kinds of satanic and occult things. He finally repented and God restored him as a vassal king. He took out the idols that he put in the temple and all that sort of thing. God had every right to get rid of Ahaz, but God made a promise to David. What was that promise?

1. the Messiah or Christ
2. David would always have a descendent sitting upon his throne

Those promises, you need to understand, concerning the king sitting on the throne. It does not depend on the righteousness of the king for that to continue. Apparently—at this stage I don't know what children Ahaz had—here is a *conspiracy to destroy the throne of David*.

“...Rezin the king of Syria, and Pekah the son of Remaliah, king of Israel, went up toward Jerusalem to war against it, but could not overcome it.... [this is the summary verse for the chapter] ...And it was told to the house of David...” (vs 1-2)—of whom Ahaz was; but there is another prophecy for the house of David buried in the prophecy concerning the virgin birth of Christ, because He would come of the house of David.

“...saying, ‘Syria is allied with Ephraim.’ And his heart was moved, and the heart of his people, as the trees of the woods are moved by the wind” (vs 2). They just kind of buckled back in fear because they heard that this confederacy and army was coming.

Verse 3: “Then the LORD said to Isaiah, ‘**Go out now to meet Ahaz, you and Shear Jashub your son...**’” Make note of the fact that Isaiah took his son.

- Why take his son?
- What reason would there be to give a message to Ahaz to take his son?
- *It has very much to do with two signs given:*
  1. one sign was for Ahaz
  2. one sign was for the coming virgin birth 700 years in the future

You can know and understand this, that a virgin birth 700 years in advance would be absolutely no sign to Ahaz. What kind of a sign would that be? It's like us sitting here and someone walks in and says, ‘Lo, in the year 2722 a virgin will give birth!’ It wouldn't mean a thing. That's why Ahaz took his son.

“...at the end of the conduit of the upper pool on the highway of the Fuller's Field. And say to

him, “Be careful and keep calm. Do not fear, nor be timid of heart because of the two tails of these smoking firebrands or because of the fierce anger of Rezin and Syria, and of the son of Remaliah; because Syria, Ephraim, and the son of Remaliah have plotted against you, saying... [here was their intent and purpose]: ...‘**Let us go up against Judah and trouble it, and break her for ourselves, and set a king in the midst of it, even the son of Tabeal**’” (vs 3-6).

*They had already selected a king!* This confronted a problem. This would end the Davidic Dynasty if they succeeded. Regardless of the fact that Ahaz was a wicked king, God had to keep His promise to David, otherwise God is a liar. *We just read that God is not a liar!* What do we have? God says that He's going to fight the battle.

Verse 7: “Thus says the Lord GOD, ‘It shall not stand, nor shall it come to pass.’ That is, their plan, *their conspiracy to get rid of the kingship of David in Jerusalem*.

Verse 8: “For the head of Syria *is* Damascus, and the head of Damascus *is* Rezin; and within sixty-five years Ephraim shall be broken so that it shall not be a people.” God determined at that point that yes, Ephraim and Israel were definitely going to go into captivity because of this very action in trying to get rid of the throne of David.

When anyone comes up against the promises and the Word of God, they may think they have a case; but what they are really doing is *they are fighting God!* Most of the false preachers don't understand that they're fighting God. Sooner or later it will come back on them in one way or another. Did Israel and Ephraim go into captivity 65 years later? *Without a doubt!*

Verse 9: “‘And the head of Ephraim *is* Samaria, and the head of Samaria *is* Remaliah's son. If you will not believe, surely you shall not be established.’ And the LORD spoke again to Ahaz, saying, ‘Ask a sign of the LORD your God; ask it either in the depth, or in the height above’” (vs 9-11). This was so that Ahaz could truly believe.

I think at this point Ahaz was kind of stricken with his own wickedness; because here's a prophet of God standing in front of him saying, ‘Look. I'm going to save you. They're not going to carry out their plan. You can ask a sign, whatever you want, in the heights above or the depths beneath.’ I think that Ahaz got humble right there for just a few minutes. It's kind of like ‘honor among thieves.’ There's a little touch of something yet left in Ahaz.

Verse 12: “But Ahaz said, ‘I will not ask, nor will I tempt the LORD.’” Notice how vs 13-14

sifts. Let's read it and then we will go back and analyze it.

Verse 13: "And he said, 'Hear now, O house of David...'" Why would he say, "...O house of David..." when he was talking to Ahaz? Why did he just not say, 'Ahaz?' *Because this part of the message is not for Ahaz!*

"...*is it* a small thing for you to weary men, but will you weary my God also? Therefore, **the LORD Himself shall give you a sign. Behold, the virgin shall conceive and bring forth a Son, and they shall call His name Immanuel**" (vs 13-14).

Let's go back and look at this beginning in v 13 again. This is something that the *King James* has which is good if you understand it. Have you ever understood the difference between 'thou' and 'ye?' 'Thou' is first person singular, meaning *you*. 'Ye' is a 'good 'ole Southern' term meaning *ya'll*, plural of *you*.

Why would he talk to Ahaz in 'ye' instead of 'thou?' *Because in v 13 he's not talking to Ahaz!* He's inspired to give a prophecy concerning Jesus Christ's virgin birth down in the future 750 years and he's talking to the house of David.

Verse 13 (KJV) "...Hear **ye** now house of David... [this is in prophecy for all the line of David] ...*is it* a small thing for **ye** to weary men, but will **ye** weary my God also?" What he's doing is correcting the whole house of David.

Verse 14: (KJV) "Therefore, the LORD Himself shall give **you**... [It should read **ye**, because this is the plural *you*, not singular *thou*.] ...a sign. Behold..." In the Hebrew it is: '...**the** virgin shall conceive...' Not **a** virgin, but **the** virgin. It's just not any young virgin, but it is **the** virgin. This is telling us that God already, 750 years before, planned to have **the virgin** Mary for the begetting of Jesus Christ. *That's really something!*

(KJV) "...**the** virgin shall conceive and shall bear a Son and shall call His name, Immanuel" (v 14). 'Immanuel' means: *God with us*.

The religionists, not wanting to believe God but wanting to relegate Christ to nothing—especially the Jews who rejected Him—what they have to do is justify their position by saying that this Hebrew word for *virgin* does not mean *virgin*, but it means *young woman*. How could just a young woman bearing a child be a sign to anybody? *It happens every day!* When Sarah bore, at 90-years-old, *that was a sign*, so much so, she even laughed. For a young woman to bear, that is nothing.

Let's look at the Hebrew and analyze vs 13 and 14. The Hebrew word for *virgin* is 'almah.' Isn't

it interesting that there are a lot of women who are named Alma? I don't think that they know that that came from the Hebrew and it means *virgin*. It is used seven times in the Old Testament:

1. it's used of Rebekah, who was the wife of Isaac; you would know that she was a virgin
2. it is used of Miriam
3. it is used in Psa. 68:25 for the procession of virgins to pass before the king
4. it is used in the Song of Solomon 1:3
5. it is used in the Song of Solomon 6:8
6. Prov. 30:18-19
7. Isa. 7:14

Understand 'almah' means *the virgin*. In the *Septuagint* they use the Greek word for *virgin*, which is 'parthenos.' That gives us kind of an analysis of this.

Verse 15: "Butter and honey He shall eat until He knows to refuse the evil and choose the good." That's referring to Christ. I'm sure that's not physical butter and honey, because we would have some of the best behaved kids if all we do is give them butter and honey. This is talking about something else. This is talking about how Christ was educated with the very best and the very sweetest of God's Word and God's Truth.

Another thing that's important to understand is in Isa. 50. I'll just interject it, because it fits here. I'll state it this way: Jesus did not go to public school, nor did Jesus go to the rabbis to be taught of them, because the educators of Jesus' day said, 'How did this Man learn not having letters?' In other words, 'He wasn't taught of us.'

Remember when Jesus went up to the Feast of Unleavened Bread and the family went home (Luke 2). They thought that Jesus was with part of the rest of the family and they couldn't find Him. They got out a day and a half's journey and they realized that Jesus wasn't there. Joseph and Mary 'high-tailed' it back to Jerusalem.

- Where did they find Him? *They found Him in the temple teaching the teachers!*
- How old was He? *Twelve, and they marveled!*
- Why?
- How on earth could a 12-year-old understand this much?

Isaiah 50:4: "The Lord GOD has given Me the tongue of the learned, to know to help the weary with a word.... [Wasn't that His whole ministry? *Yes it was!*] ...**He awakens Me morning by morning**..." Every morning, God the Father would wake up Jesus Christ and teach Him.

I'm sure that from the earliest recollection, He began to realize that He was the Son of God and that He was God Who became a human being. Just exactly when that happened I don't know, but I think that probably happened very early on. Children begin to speak at about nine or ten-months-old and by a year-old, they're speaking in a pretty good vocabulary. I would have to say that somewhere right in there He began to know and every morning God the Father would wake Him up and would teach Him.

**"...He awakens My ear to hear as one being taught. The Lord GOD has opened My ear, and I was not rebellious, nor turned away backwards"** (vs 4-5).

Then it projects forward to when He was beaten, v 6: "I gave My back to the smiters, and My cheeks to them that plucked off the hair; I did not hide My face from shame and spitting." Jesus was taught every morning.

When it's talking in Isa 7:15 about butter and honey, it's not talking about physical butter and physical honey. This is talking about the *sweet and fat teachings* that came from God the Father. What do I mean by 'fat' teaching? *That is butter laden with energy!* This symbolizes the fullness of God's Word. That's why it says, 'the righteous shall be made fat'; that fatness is a *spiritual* fatness, not a physical fatness.

Isaiah 7:15: "Butter and honey He shall eat until He knows **to refuse the evil and choose the good.**"

- Did not Christ always do that? *Yes!*
- Did He not always have to do it from the very instant of His birth?

This teaching had to go early on and continue.

Jesus Christ had a special relationship with God the Father that is totally different than anything that any other man has ever experienced, even including Moses. *It had to be!*

John 5:19: "Therefore, Jesus answered and said to them, **'Truly, truly I say to you, the Son has no power to do anything of Himself... [coming out from within His own flesh] ...but only what He sees the Father do....'**" Think on that statement a minute. Christ was able to see the Father. This means that all through His life He was able to see the Father, but this also has to do with when He was being educated as a youth and woken up every morning to be taught. *He saw the Father!*

A modern day perversion of that is Superman who came from the planet Krypton. See how these pagan things steep in your mind. He came

from the so-called planet Krypton. They had everything recorded on crystals. He was able to plug in this crystal and he heard his mother and father. That is the modern day counterfeit of what Christ was doing. Christ was able to see the Father. He talked with the Father.

Christ prayed when He raised Lazarus out of the tomb, He said, 'Father, I thank You that You have heard Me, and I know that You hear Me always. But because of the people who stand around I say *this* so that they may believe that You did send Me.' It didn't take very much of a prayer to get Lazarus out of there. Can you imagine what the priest of Baal would have done before the tomb? It would have been just like 1-Kings 18 with Elijah: They would have built an altar, jumped up and down on it, shouted, yelled, screamed and slashed themselves, blood coming all over the ground. Still the tomb didn't move.

"...For whatever He does, these things the Son also does in the same manner. For the Father loves the Son, and shows Him everything that He Himself is doing. And He will show Him greater works than these, so that you may be filled with wonder. For even as the Father raises the dead and gives life, in the same way also, the Son gives life to whom He will'" (vs 19-21).

Between knowing to choose the good over the evil (Isa. 7) and where Christ's education was every morning being awoken by God the Father to be taught (Isa. 50), to see everything that He did, that was quite a thing. Now, it blends into the son of Isaiah.

Isaiah 7:16: "For before the Child shall know to refuse the evil and choose the good..." With that statement, that means that there could be innocent sin. Christ could not have so much as innocent sin. That's why He had to be taught of the Father.

This is a prophecy about God the Father's Son, as well as Isaiah's son, v 16: "For before the Child shall know to refuse the evil and choose the good, the land whose two kings you are afraid of shall be forsaken. The LORD shall bring upon you, and upon your people, and upon your father's house, days that have not come since the days that Ephraim departed from Judah—even the king of Assyria'" (vs 16-17). Then it talks about bringing the king of Assyria.

Chapters 7-9 of Isaiah are called *The Immanuel, Book of Isaiah* because it talks about Immanuel.

Isaiah 8:8: "And he shall sweep through Judah... [the king of Assyria] ...overflowing as he

passes through; he shall reach *even* to the neck....” That’s what happened. He came right up and reached right into the neck of Judah. In the days of Hezekiah he was driven back; but he took all of Israel, all the ten tribes, came down and circled Jerusalem and had Jerusalem right up to the neck.

“...And the stretching out of his wings shall fill the breadth of your land, **O Immanuel**” (v 8)—God with us—is going to spare us. Even the fact that he comes and spreads his wings and reaches clear up into the neck. ‘Immanuel’ means: *God with us*.

Verse 9: “Make an uproar, O people, and be shattered in pieces!.... [talking about if you go ahead and conspire and try to do God’s work of battle] ...And give ear, all of you from the far countries of the earth. Gird yourselves and be broken. Gird yourselves and be broken! Take counsel together, and it shall be frustrated. Speak a word, and it shall not stand; for **God is with us**” (vs 9-10). In the Hebrew, that is ‘O Immanuel’ meaning *God is with us*.

Isa. 9 becomes a very important chapter which ties right back in with Isa. 7:13-15. As we covered in *Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament parts 1 & 2*, we saw that they understood that the Messiah was going to be God/man—God becoming a man. We have that brought together right here:

Isaiah 9:6: “**For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given; and the government shall be upon His shoulder...**” If anyone wants to know what the government of God is, *it rests right on Christ*. All the government is upon His shoulders.

- Who is the head of the Church? *Christ!*
- Who is going to be the King of the Kingdom of God sitting on the throne of David? *Christ!*

Here we have some names which are only given to Christ and these show His Divinity. The first part of this Scripture shows His humanity, “...**a Child is born, unto us a Son is given...**” *then*, “...**the government shall be upon His shoulder...**” that’s getting into the Divine side.

These are all names of God: “...and His name shall be called **Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace**. Of the increase of *His government and peace there shall be no end*, upon the throne of David, and over His kingdom, to order it and to establish it **with judgment and with righteousness from henceforth, even forever**. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will do this” (vs 6-7).

Where it says: “...The Mighty God...” in the Hebrew it is ‘El Gibbor’ which is ‘*the Almighty God*.’—El ‘Shaddai’ is *God Almighty*. It’s telling us

that the Mighty God will be born as a child—“...a Son is given...” As we saw, He would be of the:

- seed of the woman
- seed of Abraham
- seed of Judah
- seed of David

All Scripture from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter (except where noted)

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) Luke 24:25-27, 44-47
- 2) Deuteronomy 18:15-20
- 3) Numbers 12:1-8
- 4) Exodus 3:7-10
- 5) Exodus 20:18-19
- 6) Exodus 32:7-11
- 7) Isaiah 1:18
- 8) Exodus 32:11-35
- 9) John 1:19-21
- 10) Deuteronomy 18:15
- 11) John 19:22-25
- 12) John 12:42-50
- 13) John 3:31-36
- 14) John 5:19, 30-47
- 15) Hebrews 6:13-20
- 16) Isaiah 7:1-15
- 17) Isaiah 50:4-6
- 18) Isaiah 7:15
- 19) John 7:15
- 20) John 5:19
- 21) John 11:41-42
- 22) John 5:19-21
- 23) Isaiah 7:16-17
- 24) Isaiah 8:8-10
- 25) Isaiah 9:6-7

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Genesis 22; 15; 1
- Psalm 68:25
- Song of Solomon 1:3; 6:8
- Proverbs 30:18-19
- Luke 2
- 1-Kings 18

#### Also referenced:

- Book: *Josephus*
- Sermon: *That Prophet*
- Sermon Series: *Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament I & II*

FRC:nfs  
Transcribed 12-28-14  
Proofed: bo—12-30-14

## Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament IV Attributes of Christ & First and Second Coming

Fred R. Coulter

I want to remind you that this material came to me via Dr. Arnold Fruchtenbaum. He does an excellent job in understanding the prophecies of Christ in the Old Testament. When he gets into other things he gets way, way off, but at least he has this and he has done an excellent job in it. There are several things that we need to look at in the way of review. Isa. 7 has two signs:

1. an *immediate* fulfillment
2. a *future* fulfillment

King Ahaz was really one of the most wicked kings in the Old Testament, was being threatened by a combination of Syria and Israel coming together. Their desire was to destroy the lineage of the house of David and to set up a king after their own lineage.

What did God promise David? *God promised David that there would always be a man sitting on that throne!* More importantly, when you come to the prophecies of Christ it would have to continue on down through the house of David unto Jesus Christ.

One thing that Fruchtenbaum does not cover, which he does not know about, is the truth concerning the ten tribes of Israel and the transferring of the scepter.

In Gen. 49 there is a promise that was given which also applies to Christ, but it applies directly to Judah. The scepter is that sign of rulership and that sign of the throne. The first promise of the throne was given to Judah. Judah had two sons: Zarah and Pharez. When they were being born, Zarah's hand came out first and the midwife put on a red thread, because it's very important for inheritance purposes that the firstborn receives the inheritance. Obviously, the hand coming out first was the firstborn; that's why the scarlet thread was put on the wrist. There was a breach, the hand was pulled back in and Pharez was born first. The line coming down to David came through Pharez, but this prophecy says:

Genesis 49:10: **"The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come...."** There are two fulfillments. In this verse there is a first coming and a second coming. It's divided into two parts.

The scepter did not 'depart from Judah.' During the days of the end of Judah, when they went into captivity to Babylon, Jeremiah the prophet

ended up in charge of the king's daughters. You pick up the rest of the story from history. They went over to Ireland where Zarah's descendents were. The breach was healed and the scepter of rulership continued from that time over the throne which now resides in England.

When the Jews came back out of the Babylonian captivity, they did not have a king. All they had was a governor. They always had a lawgiver beginning with the prophet Haggai. Zechariah was the governor. Later, the lawgiver was Ezra.

A 'lawgiver' refers to Ezra and coming on down to Christ. You see how the fulfillment splits in this particular case. Christ was the Lawgiver. As we saw in Deut. 18, 'God would raise up a prophet like unto Moses and Him would you hear.' All of the New Testament are the laws and commandments of Christ.

Now that 'Shiloh has come'—Christ's first coming—there is no longer a lawgiver in Judah; because ***Christ is the Lawgiver Who was of the tribe of Judah.*** That's why the rabbis now are no longer the leading authorities of the Word of God in the world. That ended with Christ; that was fulfilled in Christ. *He is the Lawgiver!*

"...And to Him shall be the obedience of the people" (v 10). When Christ would return, that's when the *gathering* (KJV)/*obedience* of the people would be. Again, the scepter goes from the line of Zarah, back to Christ of the house of David and Pharez. That's an important thing to understand.

We need to see the promise that God gave. Psa. 89 is the best one because it was written after they came out of the Babylonian captivity. The psalmist was actually complaining to God that He promised unto David that *'there would always be a man sitting on Your throne'*; here the house of David has no man sitting on the throne. The house of David continued down to Christ and actually became a very lowly estate.

Psalm 89:34: "I will not break My covenant, nor change the thing that has gone out of My lips. Once I have sworn by My Holiness, I will not lie to David. His seed shall endure forever, and his throne as the sun before Me. It shall be established forever like the moon, and like a faithful witness in the heavens." **Selah**" (vs 34-37)—*think/meditate on this.*

Verse 38: "But You have cast off... [through the Babylonian captivity; God sent them

into captivity] ...and rejected us; You have been full of wrath against Your anointed.” There is no longer any king. The anointed means the king in this particular case, not Christ.

Verse 39: “You have turned away from the covenant of Your servant...” They did not understand what Jeremiah did with the king’s daughters. God did not make void His covenant. If God broke His Word, then God lied and if God lied then God can’t be true. They were wondering, ‘Where is the king? You said this to David, but apparently You broke Your covenant’—which He did not do.

“...You have defiled his crown by casting it to the ground. You have broken down all his hedges; You have brought his strongholds to ruin” (vs 39-40). When they came back out of the Babylonian captivity, they just had the little area of Judea. That’s all they had. The psalmist—Ethan the Ezrahite, one of the priests of Ezra—was wondering: ‘Look at this little, tiny, geographical area!’ If you read the accounts of Ezra and Nehemiah, what happened?:

- all the heathen round about
- all the intermarriage
- didn’t have a king, all they had was a governor
- they did have the lawgiver—Ezra

They didn’t have a king. So, he’s wondering what’s going to happen.

Verse 41: “All who pass by the way plunder him; he is a curse to his neighbors. You have set up the right hand of his enemies; You have made all his enemies rejoice. You also have turned back the edge of his sword and have not made him stand in the battle. You have made his glory to cease and have thrown his throne down to the ground” (vs 41-44). That was only for the line of Pharez. The line of Zarah, with the scepter and the throne, continued and *will continue until Christ returns*.

This is the Jewish point of view. What the psalmist was doing was reminding God, ‘Please, can we have our king?’ He wasn’t realizing that, yes, you do have your king with the line of Zarah, no longer Pharez. That’s something we need to know concerning coming down to the house of David.

The house of David was being threatened with extermination. God could not let it be exterminated. Therefore, He preserved it, though Ahaz was one of the most wicked kings that there was.

Isaiah 7:3: “Then the LORD said to Isaiah, ‘Go out now to meet Ahaz, **you and Shear Jashub your son**... [there was a special reason that he was to take his son] ...at the end of the conduit of the upper pool on the highway of the Fuller’s Field.”

Then, He came to Ahaz and said, ‘Don’t worry about it. God is not going to let you be destroyed; you decide what sign you want.’

Verse 10: “And the LORD spoke again to Ahaz, saying, ‘Ask a sign of the LORD your God; ask it either in the depth, or in the height above’” (vs 10-11). Whatever sign you want. At this point, Ahaz’s conscience pricked him because he knew he was an evil man.

Verse 12: “But Ahaz said, ‘I will not ask, nor will I tempt the LORD.’” The message switches right here, because there are two separate fulfillments:

1. there is a sign to Ahaz immediately
2. a sign which would be 700 years down in the future concerning Christ

Verse 13: “And he said, ‘Hear now...’” The *King James* is says, ‘**Hear ye now**...’ The ‘ye’ means the plural *you*. The singular ‘you’ is just the plain *you*.

“...O house of David...” (v 13). This was more than to just Ahaz. This was to the whole house of David.

“...*is it* a small thing for you to weary men, but will you...[‘ye’] ...weary my God also? Therefore, the LORD Himself shall give **you**... [plural ‘ye’] ...a sign...[which is to the house of David]” (vs 13-14).

“...Behold, **the virgin** shall conceive and bring forth a Son, and they shall call His name Immanuel” (v 14)—meaning *God with us*.

Several translations have it: ‘Behold, a young woman shall be pregnant...’ There’s nothing unusual about a young woman being pregnant, either legitimately or illegitimately.

This should read: “Behold, **the virgin**...” The Hebrew word for *virgin* is ‘almah.’ It is always used for virgins, never used for a young woman who is not a virgin. “...shall conceive and bring forth a Son, and they shall call His name Immanuel.”

Notice the similarity between vs 15 and 16; verse 15: “Butter and honey He shall eat until He knows to refuse the evil and choose the good.”

Verse 16 almost repeats it; but right at this point vs 13-15 pertain to the coming Christ. Verse 16 refers to Isaiah’s son, whom he took with him, as well as to Christ.

Verse 16: “For before the Child shall know to refuse the evil and choose the good, the land whose two kings you are afraid of shall be forsaken.” That is, the two kings of Syria and Israel

coming together in a confederacy to go against Ahaz. So, before Isaiah's little son will know enough to 'refuse the evil and choose the good,' those two kings will be no longer in power.

Verse 17: "The LORD shall bring upon you, and upon your people, and upon your father's house, days that have not come since the days that Ephraim departed from Judah—even the king of Assyria." Then it starts going into the second coming of Christ again.

The important thing to understand is that there were two signs given: The immediate one to Ahaz and the long distance one of Christ, coming on down to the time when Jesus would be born. This also tells us that there was to be one *particular* woman, one *particular* virgin.

Matthew 1:20 "But as he pondered these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream, saying, 'Joseph, son of David...'" The house of David continued on down and had to continue on down to the birth of Christ.

"...do not be afraid to take Mary to be your wife, because that which has been begotten in her is of the Holy Spirit. And she shall give birth to a Son, and you shall call His name Jesus; for He shall save His people from their sins.' Now, all this came to pass that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying, 'Behold, the virgin shall be with child...' (vs 20-23)—directly quoting Isa. 7, where it should read '*the virgin*.'

"...and shall give birth to a Son, and they shall call His name Emmanuel'; which is, being interpreted, 'God with us.' And when Joseph was awakened from his sleep, he did as the angel of the Lord had commanded, and took his wife to wed; but he did not have sexual relations with her until after she had given birth to her Son, the firstborn; and he called His name Jesus" (vs 23-25). There's the fulfillment of that.

What we have here is that the One Who is going to be the Christ, or Messiah, would have to be born of a virgin. It has to go back to the very first prophecy. The very first prophecy we covered was Gen. 3:15; that it would be 'of the seed of a woman,' not the seed of a man—showing that it had to be a Divine conception.

The One Who would be Christ would be God, then man and—as we know from the New Testament—come back and be God again, by the power of the resurrection. He would also be King, but His Kingship was not going to take effect until the second return. Christ had to be born before the destruction of the temple in 70 A.D., because none of those prophecies could be fulfilled after 70 A.D. That's important to understand.

This is just a promise of God being with us, or Emanuel; Isaiah 8:9: "Make an uproar, O people, and be shattered in pieces...." If men get together to do *their will* against the will of God—it doesn't matter if they come together or if they have great armies—it will be broken. That's just the way that God works.

"...And give ear, all of you from the far countries of the earth. Gird yourselves and be broken. Gird yourselves and be broken! Take counsel together, and it shall be frustrated. Speak a word, and it shall not stand; **for God [Emanuel] is with us**" (vs 9-10). That's what it is in the Hebrew.

In a sense, this could apply to the first coming and the second coming, as well. There are quite a few Scriptures which apply to both the first and second coming.

Let's think of the conspiracies that were against Christ. Did any of them stand? *The first conspiracy was by Herod!* What did he do? *He asked the wise men, 'Tell me where you found Him that I may come and worship Him'!* They never went back because God directed them the other way. So, Herod assembled all the troops, and he went into Bethlehem and slaughtered all the male babies two-years-old and under; but it came to nothing, just like it says:

Verse 10: "Take counsel together, and it shall be frustrated. Speak a word, and it shall not stand; for [Emanuel] God *is* with us."

What we need to do when we go through this—I know it's inspired me a lot—is to realize how powerful and true the Word of God is. The difficulty is *our understanding*. The other difficulty that we have is that we bring *our thinking* into the Scriptures instead of letting the Scriptures 'talk back' to us as to what it really means. That's why when you go through some of these Scriptures:

- you have first coming
- you have second coming
- you have first and second coming together

*If* we just put it together properly, we will have really a greater understanding of it. *I think that is fantastic!*

You will notice that Isa. 7-9 have a great deal to do with the prophecies concerning Christ. Isa. 9 is also a profound and very important section of Scripture.

I might mention that if you do not have the full *Messiah* by Georg Friedrich Handel, go ahead and spend the money. You can get it on two CDs, the full *Messiah*. Some Sabbath just sit down and

listen to that and let that be your sermon for the day. The full *Messiah* is nothing but the Words of God set to music. It is really quite profound, as you go through it. One of the ones that is really quite a song is *For Unto Us A Child Is Born*. This is really quite a miraculous thing.

### Attributes of Jesus Christ

Isa. 9 picks up where the virgin shall conceive and it follows through with the rest of the story: Isaiah 9:6: “**For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given...**” Again, showing that the One Who would become the Christ, or the Messiah, would be a man born of a woman. Now then, we have some other things that are added to show that He was also God; because the rest of these things all apply to God.

“...and the government shall be upon His shoulder...” (v 6). That’s very instructive when you start talking about the government of God.

The government of God is summarized very succinctly in these words: *If Christ be not in you and rule you, then you are not under the government of God!* You may be under ministers, but you’re not under the government of God, because Christ is the Head, Head of everyone, Head of the Church. It’s to be done God’s way. That is the true government of God. It’s on His shoulders. I think Christ can do a whole lot better job about it than we can. He’ll be merciful, kind, loving, understanding and lead us to the things we need to know, without a doubt.

Notice His name. *His name is very important!* “...and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace” (vs 6). All of these are names which apply to God. The first three names are very interesting:

- Wonderful Counselor *is reserved exclusively for God*
- The Mighty God *is just a little different than God Almighty*, but in this case it’s ‘El Gibhor.’
- The Everlasting Father

How can you be an Everlasting Father? There are two things that they interpret this in:

- 1) that He is the Beginner of eternal life and thereby being a Father by starting it
- 2) directly to where Christ—after He marries the Church and the Millennium begins—will become an Everlasting Father, just like His Father is an Everlasting Father.

Today we are the children of God the Father. During the Millennium, all of those who come into the Kingdom of God and are converted, *will be the*

*children of Christ and the bride*. Christ will be a Father. There’s no contradiction in terms, but this is referring exclusively to Christ and He *will become* the Everlasting Father.

Prince of Peace is the only one of the four names that can be used for both man and God. He was a man of peace or a Prince Who brings peace; but the other three refer exclusively to God. Let’s look at these four again and look at a couple of other Scriptures which tie in:

#### 1. Wonderful Counselor:

Isaiah 25:1: O LORD, You *are* my God; I will exalt You... [this is talking about God] ...I will praise Your name; for You have done **wonderful things; Your counsels** of old *are* faithfulness and truth,” These are attributes of God.

Isaiah 28:29: “This also comes forth from the LORD of hosts, **wonderful is His counsel**... [that’s never used of a man, only of God] ...and great is **His wisdom**.”

That’s why we are told that we go before God and lay all our cares before Him—all of our worries, troubles, and anxieties—because He cares for us. If we ask Him to work out His counsel and His will in our lives, then it’s going to come out fine. You may have a trial or two in between to see how your faith is going to go, but eventually, in the long run, everything is going to work out, *if you put it in God’s hands*.

The most difficulty that people have is that they ask God, ‘Help me.’ Then they:

- ignore the prayer
- ignore seeking the will of God
- go out and do it their own way

Then it doesn’t work and they blame God. That’s why, in prayer and in trusting God you have to persevere. You have to keep at it. Lots of times God will let things come to what appears to be an absolute disaster. *A complete disaster!* You think:

- Where is God?
- How is He going to answer this prayer?
- Why am I going through this misery and this great trial?

That’s all a part of the wonderful counseling; He is teaching you some great and profound lessons:

- 1) that you can learn to follow God and His will in all circumstances
- 2) that you trust Him through thick and thin, whether things are going good or bad
- 3) that in the end will be the victory

That’s the counsel that God is giving us.

## 2. The Almighty God/The Mighty God:

God has all power and all might and is able to do all things, and we need to trust Him.

Isaiah 10:20: “And it shall come to pass in that day... [the second return] ...that the remnant of Israel, and those who have escaped of the house of Jacob, shall never again lean upon him who struck them...” That is the Assyrian.

What’s going to happen is that all our alliances are going to backfire on us, just like you trust in a Judas who you think is your friend. That’s going to happen in the long run with America. As I’m driving along and I see all of these houses they’re building, it’s incredible. *It’s amazing!* I look at:

- all these homes
- all the cars
- all the things that people have

I keep thinking that when it says ‘peace and prosperity then sudden destruction comes,’ and so, I’m viewing this sermon from an entirely different point of view. With the prosperity that’s going on, if you have a job and you can make money, get your bills and debts paid off as much as you can. You can’t necessarily take care of your mortgage, depending on how much you have; but get all your bills taken care of. The day of reckoning is going to come, and when it comes they’re not going to be ready because:

- they’re trusting in that which cannot help
- they’re not leaning upon God
- they’re not trusting on the Mighty God

“...but **lean upon the Lord Who is in truth, the Holy One of Israel**” (v 20). That’s what they’re going to have to do. They’re going to have to repent and come back to God.

Verse 21: “**A remnant shall return, even the remnant of Jacob, to the Mighty God.**”

Let’s think of it this way concerning the Church. Right now we’re just a *little remnant* scattered everywhere. This is also for us that we need to return to God. That’s the whole reason for the process we’re going through the things that we are.

Verse 22: “For though Your people Israel are like the sand of the sea, **only a remnant of them shall return**; a destruction is determined, overflowing with righteousness. For the Lord GOD of hosts shall make a full end, as ordained, in the midst of all the earth” (vs 22-23). God is going to do it. He’s going to take care of it. It is the *Mighty God*, which refers to Christ.

Notice that all of these are in Isaiah. I think really it applies very good, and Arnold Fruchtenbaum has done a good job in putting all of these things together. Yet, when he comes to the New Testament, he just falls flat on his face.

In his book *The Messianic Christology* Fruchtenbaum shows in the Old Testament the duality of God, the duality of Elohim, that there were only two. All the way through he does a good job on it. Then he comes to the New Testament and he goes through the trinity.

Some people have understanding up to a certain point and then they’re not willing to let go of the teachings of men. Whenever we’re willing to let go of the teachings of men, then we can come to the understanding of the Truth.

He’s got one foot in Messianic Judaism and the other foot in the Baptist Church. He’s got to placate the Baptist on one side and placate the Messianic Jews on the other side. The Bible says, ‘**A double-minded man is unstable.**’ Sooner or later it’s going to get to him. God will either lead him to repentance or the ‘great split’ will take place: You have one foot over here and the other foot over there and you’re going to be split in two. It’s just amazing how that works!

Another interesting thing that Fruchtenbaum does all the way through, he calls the LORD—where you find it in the Scriptures in all capital letters from the Hebrew ‘YHVH’—*Jehovah*. He doesn’t use Yahweh. If there are any sacred namers out there, pay attention.

## 3. The Everlasting Father:

Isaiah 63:16: “For You *are* our **Father**, though Abraham does not know us, and Israel does not acknowledge us. You, O LORD, [Jehovah] **are our Father, our Redeemer; Your name is from everlasting.**”

The thing we understand out of this, is that this is a prophecy of the Church. This is not a prophecy, necessarily, of Jesus Christ being Jehovah or our Father. This is a prophecy of God the Father for the Church, because Christ will not be a Father until He returns and marries the bride. Is Christ to have children out of wedlock? *Of course not!* He invented marriage. So, this applies.

Verse 16: “For You *are* our Father, though Abraham does not know us, and Israel does not acknowledge us. **You, O LORD, are our Father, our Redeemer; Your name is from everlasting.**” That has to refer to God the Father and the Church.

## 4. Prince of Peace:

Psalm 119:165: “**Great peace** have those who love Your law, and there is no stumbling block for them...” Let’s look at this from the point of view that not only should that apply to us, but Christ said there would be many offences:

- Are we not offended from time to time?
- Does not our carnality spring up/rise up in us from time to time and we get carnally indignant over something?

*You may have a cause that is right, but let’s apply this to Christ:*

- Did Christ love the Law of God? *Without a doubt!*
- Is He the Prince of Peace? *Yes!*
- Did He always obey? *Yes!*
- Did He ever sin? *No!*
- Was He ever offended? *No!*

If you take this and apply this to Christ, you have the perfect example. May we *grow* to that? **If** we grow ‘*in the mind of Christ*,’ then we will.

It’s awfully hard for us as human beings to take the long view of things. Christ had the eternal view of things, and He knew what the outcome was going to be at the end. Therefore, *nothing* could offend Him. He did correct some in anger a couple of times, but He wasn’t offended. If we grow in the ‘mind of Christ’ and we:

- begin to take a longer view of things
- begin to have more patience and understanding

*rather than:*

- try and getting in there and forcing our way
- try to make our way or our will be done

then we turn around and tell God, ‘Thank You,’ but it was never God’s will in the first place.

*That’s how we can have great peace, too! I know if you do that it helps bring a great deal of peace, when you see the long view all brought back together, and all the difficulties resolved; because God has worked it out.*

(go to the next track)

What you have to do is, even though you may be upset or even offended at a certain point, you still have to put it in God’s hands. One of the ways that Satan can take away your crown is if you get offended at a man because he didn’t do what you knew that God expected him to do—such as a minister or something like that. **If** you give up salvation because of that, then you’re offended.

To have the ‘great peace’ take this point of view: He did this and that wasn’t according to God’s

Word. If you have an opportunity to speak to him, go ahead and speak to him about it. Whatever the situation that may occur.

Now we look back with the *long view* of time and we see that not every minister was a minister indeed. Therefore, since not every minister was a minister indeed, then many of them would do things which would offend; but don’t give up on God because of a man. ***Never, never give up on God because of a man!***

Another way is that during a time of trial and suffering, don’t be offended at God. Ask for patience, healing and help, and God will intervene. Another thing to ask, too, when you’re going through some of these things, is to ask for the wisdom to understand the lesson that God wants you to learn. Sometimes the learning of that lesson won’t be completed until some time down the road—sometimes a short distance, sometimes a long distance—then you’ll understand at that point.

That’s why only God becoming a man could become our Savior. Do you understand that? *No man who was not God previously can ever be perfect to the point of saving all mankind!* It could never happen; that’s why God had to do it!

Isaiah 26:1: “In that day this song shall be sung in the land of Judah: ‘We have a strong city; He sets up salvation *as our walls and banks....* [that is obviously after the return of Christ] ...Open the gates, so that the righteous nation shall enter in, one that is faithfully keeping Truth” (vs 1-2). Which nation is that? *The first resurrection!* We can apply this to entering into New Jerusalem, too, going clear back into Rev. 22.

Verse 3: “**You will keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on You; because he trusts in You.**”

I had a man call me. He bought a book in 1978 at the Feast of Tabernacles. He went into one of these antique stores and he paid \$10 for it. It was a 1,000 page book, a compilation of martyrdoms that happened for those who were believing in Christ and some of the letters that they wrote back and forth to each other. He told me two accounts:

- 1) There was a young woman who they put the ‘crimpers’ on her fingers to crush them. She prayed and asked God to take away the pain and there was no pain, completely gone. Trusting in God. Then they put her on a rack to stretch her apart. Again she prayed and she had no pain. Finally, they took her out and burned her.
- 2) There was an account of a man who was going to have his head chopped off with

the axe, not the guillotine. He raised his arms to praise God and the axe-man cut off his forearms. He turned to the axe man and said, 'Thank you.' Then the axe-man immediately cut off his head.

When I hear accounts like that—as I talked about all of our easy ways that we have today—we haven't been through anything, but when it comes:

Verse 3: **"You will keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on You; because he trusts in You."** The perfection of this was Christ. Didn't He trust God the Father all the time? *Yes!*

Verse 4: **"Trust in the LORD forever; for God the LORD is the everlasting Rock."** Always remember that. Just going through these things and all that we've been through, it kind of puts it all together when we understand what God will do.

All of these Scriptures imply, not only imply but teach us directly, that it's going to be an:

- eternal kingdom
- eternal government
- eternal increase forever

That can only be if the man was God, Who then again took back being God.

Isaiah 9:7: **"Of the increase of His government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and over His kingdom, to order it and to establish it with judgment and with righteousness from henceforth, even forever."** The zeal of the LORD of hosts will do this." That's all about Christ, the coming Kingdom of God and everything altogether. We have several things involved:

- those prophecies that apply to His first coming
- those prophecies that apply to His second coming
- reaffirming to the house of David that God will fulfill His promise

Isaiah 11:1: "And there shall come forth a shoot out from the stump of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots."

- Why does it not say the house of David?
- Why does it say Jessie?
- Who was Jessie? *Jessie was the father of David!*

You go back in the account of where David was chosen. Jessie came to Bethlehem and apparently it wasn't a very prosperous family. He had seven sons. David being the youngest one was out tending the sheep and was not even considered a candidate by

his father for what the prophet Samuel was going to do in replacing Saul as king.

Here David was—even considered by his family to be a little runt of a nobody—out there taking care of the sheep and the big important people are in the house; showing the lowly estate of the house of Jessie at that time. That's how David started out. Then he was raised to glory and power when he became king of Judah and then king over all the twelve tribes of Israel eight years later.

This shows that the house of David would come down to the time of Christ, but it would be just a little Branch that would grow—there was Christ. Notice what was going to happen: "...and a Branch shall grow out of his roots." So, there's still life in the house of David.

It's interesting that it is almost like the tree had been cut. There's just a stump; meaning *something that died and was revived*. That's interesting because we covered how the throne went to Zarah from Pharez. Pharez was nearly dead and the house of Jessie was nearly dead. Out of this grows *the One*: Christ.

Again, we have a great lesson in what God takes that appears to be the least and what God can do to make it the greatest. This is a direct reference of Christ talking about His humble origin.

Some evangelists have claimed that Christ came from a rich family and He had many homes that He went to, from one place or another as He was traveling around the countryside of Galilee and Judea. *No! He didn't!* How do we know that He didn't come from a rich family, though Joseph was a carpenter?

Luke 2:21: "Now, when eight days were fulfilled for circumcising the little Child, His name was called Jesus, which *He* was named by the angel before He was conceived in the womb. And when the days were fulfilled for their purification according to the Law of Moses, they brought Him to Jerusalem to present *Him* to the Lord; as it is written in *the law of the Lord* that every male opening the womb shall be called Holy to the Lord... [all of these things doubly apply to Christ, individually, particularly] ...and to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in *the law of the Lord*: **a pair of turtledoves or two young pigeons**" (vs 21-24).

That is the lowest, most meager offering that could be given. This shows that Mary and Joseph were not rich at all! Christ was born in humble and poor circumstances so that it could not be said that there was anything to be desired of Him, even to look upon Him as a person or from what He may have had in the way of physical assets in the earth.

That's why when the man came to Him and said, 'Lord, I'll follow you wherever You go.' Christ said, 'Foxes have holes, and birds of heaven *have* nests; but the Son of man has no place to lay His head.' How could it be that He would then be thought of as being a rich man, having many homes in which to lay His head? *Not so!*

This shows what is the important thing, not only in Christ, but also in our lives. We have something very profound as we come along.

Isaiah 11:2: "And the Spirit of the LORD <sup>[#1]</sup>**shall rest upon Him**... [two other attributes in three sets will follow] ...<sup>[#2]</sup>the **spirit of wisdom and <sup>[#3]</sup>understanding, <sup>[#4]</sup>the spirit of counsel and <sup>[#5]</sup>might, <sup>[#6]</sup>the spirit of knowledge and of <sup>[#7]</sup>the fear of the LORD.**" We have a total of seven things referring to what the Spirit of God can do.

All of that resided in Christ, individually. None of these things can reside in any other man though he have the Spirit of God, all collectively.

1-Cor. 12 talks about the Church, the body of Christ, and how that the Spirit divides severally of these seven things, and a few others that are not listed there.

1-Corinthians 12:4: "Now there are differences of gifts... [the seven gifts of the Spirit that Christ had in Isa. 11] ...but the same Spirit; and there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. And there are differences of operations, but it is the same God Who is working all things in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to each one for *the benefit of all*.... [the greater of the Church] ...For to one, a word of wisdom is given by the Spirit" (vs 4-8)—so that one can be wise by the Spirit of God.

"...and to another, a word of knowledge according to the same Spirit; and to a different one, faith by the same Spirit; and to another, gifts of healing by the same Spirit; and to another, *the* working of miracles; and to another, prophecy; and to another, discerning of spirits; and to a different one, various languages; and to another, *the* interpretation of languages. But the one and the same Spirit is operating in all these things, dividing separately to each one as *God* Himself desires" (vs 8-11). Yet, all this was in Christ. Did He not do every one of these things? *No question about it!*

Just think! I don't know if there would be a human being alive that could have his carnality reduced down to such a state that he could contain more than one or two of these at all. What would happen? He would get lifted up in his own vanity, begin trusting in himself and end up just like Solomon.

Solomon had all these things given to him: Wisdom, understanding, wealth and everything. What happened? *He apostized and went after other gods; got lifted up in his own vanity!* That's why it's not given to all men in the same way equally. Otherwise, Christ could not be the Christ. *He had to have them all!*

In John 3:34 John the Baptist said of Christ that God does not give Him the Spirit 'by measure.' In all other human beings it's given by measure in gifts.

### First and Second Coming of Christ

We're coming into some of the things concerning Christ's first and second coming, then it blends on into the whole thing concerning the Millennium.

Isaiah 11:4: "But with righteousness He shall judge the poor, and shall reprove with equity for the meek of the earth...." Did Christ not do that? Did He not reprove the Pharisees and scribes for their oppressing of the poor and the meek?

"...And He shall strike the earth with the rod of His mouth... [second coming] ...and with the breath of His lips He shall slay the wicked.... [second coming] ...And righteousness shall be the girdle of His loins, and faithfulness the girdle of His reins" (vs 4-5). That could be both first and second coming.

In Isa. 11 we have showing that Christ would come from the *stump* or the *Branch* of Jesse; the only One! Isn't that interesting? In other words, the house of David would essentially disappear from history from that time forward.

Here's a prophecy concerning John the Baptist. When a king would come, he would have what is called a forerunner or a herald: 'The king is coming, the king is coming. Hear ye, hear ye, the king is coming. Clear the way.'

When Christ entered Jerusalem, how did He enter? He didn't come in a chariot. *He came on the colt of an ass on which no one had ever ridden!* That in itself is a miracle if you've ever had anything to do with breaking horses or mules.

Isaiah 40:1: "'Comfort ye, comfort ye, My people,' says your God." As a matter of fact, that's the first oratorio that *The Messiah* begins with.

Verse 2: "'Speak comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned... [this has to do with the second coming, too] ...for she has received of the LORD'S hand double for all her sins.'"

That tells you how bad and bloody it's going to be in Jerusalem in the near future. It's like everything else that men do to come together to try and find common ground and try to have a peace that's established by men. It always ends up in a disaster.

Jerusalem is going to pay double for her sins. We never, never want to get ourselves in a situation where we are worthy of double payment for our sins. That's why when we sin—because we have *the law of sin and death* in us—we are weak and we need to repent. Don't wait, as I've said before, until you get yourselves squared around. You can't ever get yourselves squared around until you repent first. *You have to do that first!*

It's a real temptation, when you sin or you've done something wrong and you feel real bad about it and you're ashamed to go before God, especially if it's something that's kind of a repetitive weakness that you have. You go to God and you say, 'Oh, no, I've done it again!' ***That's the time you need to! Right away, instantly!*** God has called you to forgive you. It says that 'if we confess our sins He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins.' Don't ever back away from repenting. Don't ever get yourself in a situation to where you'll receive double for your sins, as happened with the people of Judah who rejected Jesus Christ at His first coming.

Verse 3: "A voice is calling out in the wilderness, 'Prepare the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.... [the first coming] (notice the second coming): ...Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low; and the crooked places shall be made straight, and the rough places plain; and the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see *it* together; for the mouth of the LORD has spoken'" (vs 3-5). We have a combination of the first and second comings. Obviously, when Christ was here, not every valley and hill exchanged places.

- Did He not bring down the mighty who were in government, by His crucifixion? *Yes, He did!*
- Did He not bring down all of the mighty demons because of it? *Yes, He did!*

*So, spiritually it occurred!*

"...the crooked places shall be made straight..." (v 4) That's the preaching of the Gospel. When Christ returns the second time for His second coming. That's going to apply literally and physically to the earth. It's all going to be straightened out.

"...and the glory of the LORD shall be revealed..." (v 5) John writes, 'We beheld His

glory. The glory of the only begotten of God.' But all flesh didn't see it together—did they? Immediately, you have the first coming, a fulfillment of it. Then you go into the second coming, it has a fulfillment of it.

"...for the mouth of the LORD has spoken.'.... [it's going to take place] ...A voice says, 'Cry!' And he said, 'What shall I cry?' 'All flesh *is* grass, and all the beauty of it *is* as the flower of the field. The grass withers, the flower fades because the breath of the LORD blows upon it; surely the people *are* grass. The grass withers, the flower fades; but **the Word of our God shall stand forever**'" (vs 5-8) Then it talks about the Gospel being preached by the One Who was coming.

Let's see how John the Baptist fulfilled that. It is saying that he did bring the mighty low by telling them to repent. That was quite a thing. *No one ever told a Pharisee to repent!* That's like walking up to the pope and calling him a sinner.

Matthew 3:1: "Now, in those days John the Baptist came preaching in the wilderness of Judea, and saying, 'Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.' For this is he who was spoken of by Isaiah the prophet, saying, '*The voice of one crying in the wilderness, "Prepare the way of the Lord, make straight His paths*"' (vs 1-3).

When John the Baptist wanted to find out if Christ was really *the One*, because he really didn't expect to be in prison—he lost his head shortly after that—he sent some of his disciples to say, 'Are You the One?' Christ said to go back and tell John that 'the sick are healed, the dead are raised, and the Gospel is preached.' They went back and told John. Then Christ turned to the people and He said of John the Baptist: '*there was no man born of woman, greater than he. Yet, he did no miracle and what did you come out to see?*' John did not come in fine raiment or clothing.

This is a lesson that God is teaching: ***You can never please critical, human nature!*** John came more righteous than the Pharisees. Christ came eating and drinking. So, they said of John: 'He has a demon,' and they said of Christ: 'You're a sinner because You eat and drink with sinners and publicans and You're a winebibber.'

Verse 4: "Now, John himself wore a garment of camel's hair, and a leather belt around his waist; and his food was locusts and wild honey." *You talk about a restricted diet!* Anybody for honey-dipped locusts?

Verse 5: "Then went out to him *those from* Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the country around the Jordan, and were being baptized by him in the

Jordan, confessing their sins. But after seeing many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said to them, ‘*You brood of vipers...*’ (vs 5-7). Here John is spiritually bringing the ‘high’ *low* by calling them to repentance and naming them for what they are.

“...who has forewarned you to flee from the coming wrath? Therefore, produce fruits worthy of repentance; and do not think to say within yourselves, ‘We have Abraham *for our father*’; for I tell you that God is able from these stones to raise up children to Abraham. But already the axe is striking at the roots of the trees; therefore, every tree that is not producing good fruit is cut down and thrown into *the fire*” (vs 7-10). That refers back to Isa. 40; when He comes the second time it’s going to be with a consuming fire.

Verse 11: “I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but the One Who *is* coming after me is mightier than I, of Whom I am not fit to carry His sandals; He shall baptize you with *the* Holy Spirit, and with fire; Whose winnowing shovel *is* in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His floor, and will gather His wheat into the granary; but the chaff He will burn up with unquenchable fire” (vs 11-12).

John the Baptist called them a generation of vipers and chaff. Their hypocrisy was so bad, there was not any substance to them. Just like with chaff, there’s no substance to it. There’s no nourishment to it. It’s nothing! You put the torch to it and it literally explodes, nothing left; it’s gone. You’d have to have an awful lot of chaff to even find the ashes of it because there’s nothing left.

Let’s see what John the Baptist said of himself. John 1:6: “There was a man sent by God, whose name *was* John. **He came for a witness, that he might testify concerning the Light**, so that through him all might believe. **He was not the Light, but came that he might testify concerning the Light**” (vs 6-8). Talking about Christ, John was the forerunner.

Verse 15: “John testified concerning Him, and proclaimed, saying, ‘This was He of Whom I said, “He Who comes after me has precedence over me because He was before me.”’” What he’s actually saying is that Christ existed before him. He’s testifying to the fact that this One Who was Christ was God previously. We know from the account that John the Baptist was born six months before Christ was born. It could not be the physical existence John is talking about here, but Christ’s existence as God previously.

Verse 19: “And this is the testimony of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem

to ask him...” This shows that they understood the times. They understood it was about time for the Messiah to come, and when you read the questions here you’ll realize that.

They came from Jerusalem. This means this was an official entourage being sent by the priests. When you read in Matt. 3 that they came from Jerusalem and he called them a bunch of vipers you will know that it was really a confrontation.

All the people who were standing around when this occurred, I wonder what was in their minds? I imagine some people were upset because John was putting down their favorite heroes or leaders. Others were happy because they had been oppressed by them, and he called them vipers and they understood that they were vipers.

Here’s John’s record when they sent priests and Levites for an official visit. They came to ask him:

“...‘Who are you?’ Then he *freely* admitted, and did not deny, but declared, ‘I am not the Christ’” (vs 19-20)—which means they were looking for the Christ and John probably had been asked that before. John knew who Jesus was.

Verse 21: “And they asked him, ‘Then who *are you*? Are you Elijah?...’” John didn’t understand that he was Elijah. Later, Jesus told His disciples that John was Elijah.

“...And he said, ‘I am not.’ *Then they asked*, ‘Are you the Prophet?’... [Deut. 18, which refers to Christ] ...And he answered, ‘No.’ Therefore, they said to him, ‘Who are you? What do you say about yourself so **that we may give an answer to those who sent us?**’” (vs 21-22). They had to come back with a full report of their investigation. Just like having a congressional committee descend upon some little company, to walk through it and see how it’s doing, to give a report back to Washington, D.C.

Verse 23: “**He said, ‘I am a voice crying in the wilderness, “Make straight the way of the Lord,” as Isaiah the prophet said.**” Now, those who had been sent belonged to *the sect* of the Pharisees, and they asked him, saying to him, ‘Why then are you baptizing, if you are not the Christ, nor Elijah, nor the Prophet?’ John answered them, saying, ‘I baptize with water, but there is One *Who* stands among you Whom you do not know. He it is Who comes after me, *but* Who has precedence over me; of Whom I am not worthy to loose the thong of His sandal’” (vs 23-27). John knew who he was and declared it to them.

Isaiah 40 shows that there was to be the forerunner to announce the coming of the King. I believe there will be another coming Elijah. Even though John the Baptist was Elijah for that age, there is a coming Elijah, as it states:

Malachi 4:5: **“Behold, I *will* send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD.”** The first coming of Christ was not the ‘great and dreadful day of the LORD.’

Verse 6: **“And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the sons, and the heart of the sons to their fathers, lest I come and strike the earth *with* utter destruction.”**

All Scripture from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter.

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) Genesis 49:10
- 2) Psalms 89:34-44
- 3) Isaiah 7:3, 10-17
- 4) Matthew 1:20-25
- 5) Isaiah 8:9-10
- 6) Isaiah 9:6
- 7) Isaiah 25:1
- 8) Isaiah 28:29
- 9) Isaiah 10:20-23
- 10) Isaiah 63:16
- 11) Psalms 119:165
- 12) Isaiah 26:1-4
- 13) Isaiah 9:7
- 14) Isaiah 11:1
- 15) Luke 2:21-24
- 16) Isaiah 11:2
- 17) 1-Corinthians 12:4-11
- 18) Isaiah 11:4-5
- 19) Isaiah 40:1-8
- 20) Matthew 3:1-12
- 21) John 1:6-8, 15, 19-27
- 22) Malachi 4:5-6

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Deuteronomy 18
- Genesis 3:15
- Revelation 22
- John 3:34

Also referenced: Book: *The Messianic Christology*  
by Arnold Fruchtenbaum

FRC:nfs  
Transcribed: 01-09-15  
Proofed: bo—1-13-15

## Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament V Suffering Servant/Servant Sacrifice

Fred R. Coulter

Going through and preparing these things, I did want to mention about Arnold Fruchtenbaum. He has done a very, very excellent job in putting all this material together. I'm using the material that he has in his book *Messianic Christology*.

He is still, like every Jew, hung up on Jews. He makes certain statements in the book, which I'll bring out a little later on, but that's not to take away from what he has done.

With Christ we all need to have a larger and greater picture. Part of the thing that I'm really getting out of this is that the Bible, as we have it, is one complete book—the whole Bible. It is so integrated, Old Testament and New Testament, that it is virtually impossible to separate the two. That's why God inspired that the Bible be with the Old and the New Testament together. It's all one Word of God.

If there were Christ Who would come—the Messiah—and there were no prophecies concerning Him in the Word of God, that would be very strange. If there are prophecies, which there are—probably many, many more than we fully understand at this present point—would He not fulfill every one of them? *Yes, He would, because God is true and the Word of God is true*, Old Testament and New Testament!

Let's see in Matt. 5 where that is true and see that the first thing that Jesus did was to proclaim what He was going to do, and made it very clear.

Matthew 5:17: "Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; **I did not come to abolish, but to fulfill.**" *Destroy (KJV)* means *to abolish, to render null and void*, which is what the Protestants claim. They are preaching contrary to the Word of God. "...to fulfill," has two meanings:

1. *to bring the Laws of God and the Word of God to the full*, which He's done through inspiring the New Testament and by showing the spiritual applications of the Law
2. *by fulfilling all of those things which applied to Him that are in the Law and in the Prophets*, which He did do

Particularly in Matt. you will see how Matthew went through and said, 'This was done so that it would be fulfilled as spoken by the Prophet Isaiah.' He says this over and over again.

*What you find in the New Testament is the fulfillment of the prophecies given in the Old Testament.* Therefore, if you accept the New Testament then you must accept the Old Testament; because the New Testament is built upon the foundation of:

- the Law
- the Prophets
- Jesus Christ
- the Apostles

It all goes together.

Verse 18: "**For truly I say to you, until the heaven and the earth shall pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no way pass from the Law until everything has been fulfilled.**" Everything has not been fulfilled; it is yet to be fulfilled.

Let's look at some of these prophecies. This is very, very profound in Isa. 40, the prophecy concerning John the Baptist. This is important, too, because John the Baptist also knew who he was and referred back to Isa. 40.

Isaiah 40:3: "A voice is calling out in the wilderness, 'Prepare the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God.'" That's the first coming.

Here is the second coming. This is how we know that there is going to come another Elijah who will fulfill this again in preparing for the second coming of Christ.

Verse 4: "Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low; and the crooked places shall be made straight, and the rough places plain; and the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and **all flesh shall see it together**; for the mouth of the LORD has spoken" (vs 4-5). That hasn't happened, yet. That didn't happen with His first coming. There's going to have to be this announcement that will come. You can liken John the Baptist to a herald, or a forerunner, preparing the way for Christ.

Verse 6: "A voice says, 'Cry!' And he said, 'What shall I cry?' 'All flesh is grass, and all the beauty of it is as the flower of the field. The grass withers, the flower fades because the breath of the LORD blows upon it; surely the people are grass. The grass withers, the flower fades; but the Word of our God shall stand forever'" (vs 6-8).

Let's see this concerning what John the Baptist spoke. You will notice in it that Jesus didn't speak about 'every valley shall be exalted and every hill and mountain made low.' He just speaks concerning 'the voice of one crying in the wilderness makes straight the way of the Lord.'

Matthew 3:1: "Now, in those days John the Baptist came preaching in the wilderness of Judea, and saying, 'Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.' For this is he who was spoken of by Isaiah the prophet, saying..." (vs 1-3). This is Matthew writing, interpreting who John the Baptist was. We'll see in just a minute that John knew he was the voice of one; but this is Matthew giving the interpretation.

"...*The* voice of one crying in the wilderness, "Prepare the way of *the* Lord, make straight His paths." Now, John himself wore a garment of camel's hair..." (vs 3-4). He went out and preached repentance saying to believe on Him Who should follow.

Let's come to the same account in Luke 3:2: "In *the time of the* priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas, *the* word of God came unto John, the son of Zacharias, in the wilderness. And he went into all the country around the Jordan, proclaiming *the* baptism of repentance for *the* remission of sins; **as it is written in the book of the words of the prophet Isaiah, saying, 'The voice of one crying in the wilderness, "Prepare the way of the Lord; make straight His paths"'"** (vs 2-4). Then Luke quotes this, the full quote:

Verse 5: "'Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be made low; and the crooked *places* shall be made into straight *paths*, and the rough *places* into smooth ways; and **all flesh shall see the salvation of God.**'.... [in this case, rather than just the glory] ...For this reason, he said to the multitudes who were coming out to be baptized by him, '*You* offspring of vipers, who has forewarned you to flee from the coming wrath? Therefore, **bring forth fruits worthy of repentance; and do not begin to say to yourselves, "We have Abraham for our father," because I tell you that God has the power to raise up children to Abraham from these stones**'" (vs 5-8).

The rest of it, that 'the axe is laid to the roots and is ready to cut down those trees,' speaking of Judaism that was not bringing forth the fruit.

Let's see that John the Baptist knew who he was, John 1:19: "And this is the testimony of John, when the **Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem...**" This is an *official* visit. You don't send priests and Levites from the Sanhedrin unless there has

been a commission given to them to go down and find out what is going on.

"...to ask him, 'Who are you?'" (v 19). Especially so, since John was the son of a priest.

- Why is he not up here at the temple?
- Why is he not up here offering the offerings and taking care of this Levitical work that he needs to do?
- Why is he down there at the Jordan?
- Why does he have long hair and taking a Nazarite vow?

Even his mother was not to eat any grapes or anything of the wine, neither was he.

- Why is he down there with a girdle of camel's hair and eating locusts and wild honey?
- Why is he not up here eating of the offerings that come into the temple?

This is an official thing. This is telling us a lot when John wrote "....**Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem** to ask him, 'Who are you?'"

Verse 20: "Then he *freely* admitted, and did not deny, but declared, '**I am not the Christ.**'" John knew that. Were going to see that *Christ knew that He was the Christ!*

Verse 21: "And they asked him, 'Then who are you? Are you Elijah?' And he said, 'I am not.'" Later we find in Matt. 17 that Jesus said that *John was the Elijah*.

"...Then they asked, 'Are you the Prophet?'.... [referring to the One Who had become Christ] ...And he answered, 'No.' Therefore, they said to him, 'Who are you? What do you say about yourself so that we may give an answer to those who sent us?'" (vs 21-22). They were officially sent. This sounds kind of like the interrogation of the priest when they asked Christ, 'What do You say of Yourself?' Jesus said, 'Henceforth, you will see the Son of man coming in the glory of the Father and the clouds of heaven.'

John the Baptist said of himself, v 23: "He said, 'I *am* a voice crying in the wilderness, "Make straight the way of *the* Lord," as Isaiah the prophet said.' Now, those who had been sent belonged to *the sect* of the Pharisees, and they asked him, saying to him, 'Why then are you baptizing...'" (vs 23-25)—with the implication, seeing as how you didn't get any authority from us.

"...if you are not the Christ, nor Elijah, nor the Prophet?" John answered them, saying, 'I baptize with water, but there is one *Who* stands among you Whom you do not know. He it is Who comes after me, *but* Who has precedence over me...' (v2 25-27). John said in another place that 'He [Jesus]

existed before me [John the Baptist]' and that's what it means.

“...of Whom I am not worthy to loose the thong of His sandal.’ These things took place in Bethabara across the Jordan, where John was baptizing” (vs 27-28). Then it shows how Jesus came to him to be baptized and the Holy Spirit came upon Him.

Isa. 40 shows that there is going to be someone announcing the way, *preparing the way*. If you want to know more about the coming Elijah, note sermon: *Who Are the Two Witnesses and Elijah?*

Isa. 42 shows the emphasis of Jesus as the *Servant*; Isaiah 42:1: “**Behold My Servant**, Whom I uphold; My Elect, *in Whom* My soul delights....” You can go through the New Testament and add a lot of Scriptures to this, about the voice that came out of heaven, ‘This is My beloved Son in Whom I am well pleased, hear Him’ and ‘...in Whom My soul delights.’

“...I have put My Spirit upon Him; He shall bring forth justice to the Gentiles. **He shall not cry out, nor lift up, nor cause His voice to be heard in the street**” (vs 1-2). In other words, He was not going to be a political rebel-rouser going through the streets, raising up mobs like you see today where they have all these mobs and people going around to get the majority. He wasn't going to do that. He wasn't going to raise up a political entity or anything like that.

Verse 3: “A bruised reed He shall not break, and a smoking wick He shall not quench; **in truth He shall bring forth justice.**” That's the whole story of Christ's encounter with all the scribes, Pharisees and Sadducees. “...in truth He shall bring forth justice.”

- He made them see where they were wrong
- He condemned them in Mark 7 of all their traditions
- He condemned them in Matt. 23 of all of their practices and what they did

That was a judgment against them unto truth.

Verse 4: “He shall not fail nor be discouraged...” We will see that He was discouraged temporarily, when we get to another section, but He will not be discouraged and give up.

This is something that you need to understand if you get discouraged, so that you don't give up. There are some people who get discouraged because they've had such a heavy load dumped upon them that they think they're never going to make it.

They don't understand the grace of God and the love of God.

Jesus loved God, the Father loved Jesus and the only time that He was discouraged—I think Fruchtenbaum has it right—was when He was praying in the Garden of Gethsemane when He was fearful of dying spiritually, not just the physical death. He said, ‘Oh Lord, let this cup pass from me if it be Your will. Nevertheless, not My will but Your will be done.’ That's the only hint of discouragement that we will find. All the rest, He was never discouraged, yet, He had every odd against Him.

“...until He has set justice in the earth...” (vs 4). When is that going to be set? He established it when He was here, the right way to judge through His Word. When will the judgment be set? *Rev. 20!* The fulfilling of the Feast of Tabernacles: ‘And I saw thrones and judgment was given unto them.’

“...and the isles shall wait for His Law” (v 4). This is actually prophecy, I believe, when the Bible was translated into English by William Tyndale and finished by Rogers and Coverdale.

The world has not been the same since then. That's the source of the Bible really going out into the whole world from the English speaking people. Remember, God said that He would fulfill His promise to Israel. When God told David that He would allow a house to be built but not David, but his son. God told them that, ‘I will settle Israel in it's own land.’ Yet, David was king over all 12 tribes. This has to have something to do with that.

Verse 5: “Thus says the LORD God, *He* who created the heavens and stretched them out, spreading forth the earth and its offspring; He who gives breath to the people upon it and spirit to those who walk in it. **I the LORD have called You in righteousness, and will hold Your hand, and will keep You, and give You for a covenant of the people, for a Light to the Gentiles; to open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, those who sit in darkness out of the prison house. I am the LORD; that is My name; and My glory I will not give to another, nor My praise to graven images**” (vs 5-8). That's all talking about *the ministry of Christ* and what He would do.

Verse 6: “**I the LORD have called You in righteousness...**” When was Jesus called to do this? *When the One of Elohim, Who would become the Father, made the covenant with the One of Elohim Who would become the Son*, which was before the foundation of the world! Also, after Jesus was born He was called in righteousness.

“...and will hold Your hand...” (v 6). Showing that it was the Father Who was responsible for the rearing of Christ, though Mary was the mother. God was with Him wherever He went.

“...and will keep You, and give You for a **covenant of the people...**” (v 6). Christ—through His body and through His blood, which is the New Covenant—is the covenant for *the people not just the Jews*.

“...for a Light to the Gentiles” (v 6). The people of God refer to Gentiles in the New Testament as well as to those Jews who were converted.

Ephesians 2:11: “Therefore, remember that you were once Gentiles in *the flesh*, who are called uncircumcision by those who are called circumcision in *the flesh* made by hands; and that you were without Christ at that time, alienated from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world. But now in Christ Jesus, you who were once far off are made near by the blood of Christ. For He is our peace, Who has made both one, and has broken down the middle wall of partition, having annulled in His flesh the enmity... [the enmity which was created by Judaism] ...**the law of commandments contained in the decrees of men...**” (vs 11-15).

That’s all the *Code of Jewish Law*. If you don’t know about the *Code of Jewish Law* or you’ve never seen the book called *Code of Jewish Law* by Solomon Ganzfried and Hyman Goldin, you are going to be absolutely amazed. It contains 1,000s of laws of what Judaism is. When you read those, you will understand why it built enmity. Some of them are so nonsensical picky and, in some cases, almost insane. One person who read it said that it has got to be from the mind of an insane person. You’ll understand why it created the enmity.

The enmity was created because the Jews distained the Gentiles. They not only held them as second class citizens, but considered them as non-people—‘goyim’—*animals*. That’s why God called the Gentiles and rejected the Jews.

Whenever anyone gets lifted up so much in their own vanity and their own way, be sure that God is going to reject you. You say you belong to God, but you don’t love people and you don’t do those things which are right, it’s something! *God is going to take care of you!* God abolished that which were contained in ordinances and are the traditions.

“...so that in Himself He might create both into **one new man**, making peace...” (v 15) Who was Christ, the covenant for the people. Now, they are the people of God.

Verse 16: “And *that* He might reconcile both to God in one body through the cross, having slain the enmity by it. Now when He came, He preached the Gospel—peace to you who *were* far off and to those who *were* near. For through Him we both have *direct* access by one Spirit to the Father. So then, **you are no longer aliens and foreigners; but you are fellow citizens with the saints, and are of the household of God**” (vs 16-19). So, they are the people of God.

Let’s see this confirmed, 1-Peter 2:9: “But you *are* a chosen stock... [God has to choose you] ...a royal priesthood... [to be fulfilled when the Millennium comes] ...a Holy nation... [which we will be] ...a people for a possession *of God*, that you might proclaim His *excellent* virtues, Who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light; **who once were not a people, but now are the people of God...**” (vs 9-10). When it says in Isa. 42 that God gave His Servant for a covenant of the people, that includes *Jew and Gentile*, not just Jew or Israelite.

Isaiah 42:6: “I the LORD have called You in righteousness, and will hold Your hand, and will keep You, and **give You...**” The implication here is **an offering**, because every covenant is sealed with an offering; we’ve studied covenant law.

“...for a covenant of the people, for a Light to the Gentiles” (v 6). They then become the people of God. That’s important for us to know and realize.

#### Review of Isa. 42:

##### **Isa. 42:1:**

- Christ is going to be the Servant of God
  - ✓ He would not serve Himself
  - ✓ He wasn’t going to do His ‘thing’
- Mark is the one who emphasizes the *Servant*
- Matthew emphasizes His royal line
- Luke deals with the humanity of Christ being the Son of man
- John deals with Christ as being the Son of God

You see how God inspired all of this in all of the Gospels? An aspect of it to show and teach everything that’s in the Old Testament?

It’s been amazing to me to go through these things, put them together, study them and understand what it is. It’s helped bring a fullness of understanding to the Word of God

##### **Verse 2:**

Christ is going to behave Himself; He’s not going to be a rebel-rouser or a political person raising up a crowd to follow Him, though crowds followed Him. He spoke from the hilltop. He did

speak in the streets and the synagogues, but not in this way. The people came to Him. He was not out there lifting up His voice so that He would cause people to come to Him in a political sense.

**Verse 3:**

- He's going to be filled with Truth and mercy
- He's going to be kind
- He's not going to go out and be destructive

**Verse 4** shows that He's going to be successful; He will not fail.

**Verses 5-8** shows the whole mission that He was to have:

- to reach out to the Jews
- to reach out to the Gentiles
- to become the covenant sacrifice for both

Isaiah 49:1: "Listen, O isles, to Me; and hearken, you people from afar..." This *may* have to do with the British Isles and 'people from afar' reaching aspects all around the world. Then it talks about Christ:

**"...the LORD has called Me from the womb; He has made mention of My name from My mother's belly..."** (v 1). Notice he doesn't say, 'from the day My Father conceived Me'; but "...from My mother's belly..." because it was a supernatural conception. In all the prophecies referring to Christ, it talks about Mary the mother, and not Joseph the father, because **God** was His Father.

Verse 2: "And He has made My mouth like a sharp sword... [showing the education that He had] ...in the shadow of His hand He has hidden Me, and made Me a polished shaft. He has hidden Me in His quiver." When did that take place? *When Herod was threatening to kill Christ!* What happened?

- the angels were sent in a dream to Joseph and said to 'take the Child and the mother and get you into Egypt'
- He was taken and hidden away

They weren't able to get Him, just like you have a quiver that you hide.

All of a sudden—when He's 12—He shows up at the temple and says, 'I have to be about My Father's business.' It shows that He knew Who His Father was at that time; it wasn't Joseph. He probably knew Who His Father was long before that. Then we know nothing of Him until He comes preaching when He's 30. There's the fulfillment of that.

Verse 3: "And said to Me, '**You are My servant**, O Israel..." This is not referring to the nation of Israel, but to Christ Who would serve Israel.

"...in whom I will be glorified.' Then I said, 'I have labored in vain... [here is the only discouragement that Christ had] ...I have spent My strength for nothing, and in vain..." (vs 3-4). Christ even said that the disciples would leave Him, referring to the prophecy with 'the Shepherd shall be smitten and the sheep shall be scattered.' *They all left Him!*

"...yet, surely justice is with the LORD, and My reward is with My God.'.... [Christ still trusted in God right to very last] ...And now, says the LORD—Who formed Me from the womb *to be* His servant, to bring Jacob again to Him, (though Israel is not gathered... [or *be gathered*] ...yet, I shall be glorious in the eyes of the LORD, and My God shall be My strength)—" It's showing the total trust He has.

Let's stop here and think about some of the other things that we've covered:

*If* we are to have the faith of Christ, which we are, and *if* its going to be Christ's own faith in us, which it should be, then this the kind of faith that we need to have.

How did Jesus operate? *He said, 'I came not to do My own will, but the will of the Father Who sent me.* I can of My own self do nothing. What I see the Father do, that's what I do.' That's not showing a weakness at all. Some people may consider that a weakness; it isn't. *That's showing a strength!*

*If* you have that faith in Christ that Christ had in the Father, that shows **great strength**—that you do nothing but God's will—not a weakness.

Verse 6: "He said, 'It is but a little *thing* that You should be My servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob, and to bring back the preserved ones of Israel..." *No!* It's a huge and great task. It's going to be accomplished at His second coming; though He preached to them at His first coming.

"...I will also give You for a light to the nations, to be My salvation to the end of the earth..." (v 6). You tie that together with what we just read previously, 'I will make You *the covenant of the people*.' Right here He says, 'to be My salvation to the end of the earth.' That has a *broad* fulfillment:

- an *immediate fulfillment* in His ministry
- a *secondary fulfillment* in the ministry of the apostles who went into all the world and preached the Gospel

- a *third fulfillment* during the Millennium when the ‘earth is going to be covered with the knowledge of God as the oceans cover the earth,’ and all the salvation that comes there
- the *fourth fulfillment* will be the Great White Throne Judgment.

You see how these prophecies are? You pick one and it expands out to fulfill to the ends of the earth.

Verse 7: “Thus says the LORD, **the Redeemer** of Israel, **His Holy One**...” There you have indications of *two Jehovahs*.

“...to Him whom man despises, to Him whom the nation hates, **the Servant of rulers**...” You have two things here:

1. you have where He’s going to be rejected and despised, that’s His first coming
2. then you have His second coming:

“...Kings shall see and arise, princes also shall worship because of the LORD who is faithful, the Holy One of Israel, and He shall choose You” (v 7). Right in this one verse, you’ve got woven together Christ’s first and second coming.

This is what’s so interesting with what is written in the Prophets, the Law and the Writings. Lot’s of times you have first and second coming intermingled. We’ll see this several times as we go through these. That’s why you have to be able to distinguish between the two of them. That’s what the Jews did not do in rejecting Him. They only saw the setting up of the kingdom and for a Messiah to rule.

Verse 8: “Thus says the LORD, ‘In a favorable time I have answered You, **and in a day of salvation** I have helped You... [referring to those that would be called; God the Father helped Christ] ...and I will preserve You... [which He did of Christ in resurrection] ...and **give You for a covenant of the people**, to restore the earth...’” Again, you have the covenant made with His own body, with His whole life.

“...to cause them to inherit the wasted inheritances; that You may say to the prisoners, ‘Go out!’...” (vs 8-9). This is the first and second coming.

- first coming: release of the demons taken out of spiritual darkness, given the Light of the Gospel and the Truth
- second coming: going to be literally

“...‘Go out!’ To those who *are* in darkness, ‘Show yourselves!’ **They shall feed in the ways, and their pastures shall be in all high places**” (v

9). This has to be a combination of the first and second coming. Think of this spiritually, meaning *the very best*. That’s why it’s important that we be fed on the Word of God.

Verse 10: “They shall not hunger nor thirst...” That’s said of Christ—isn’t it?

Showing the work of what Christ, the Messiah, would do in **serving the people**, John 6:35: “Jesus said to them, ‘I am the Bread of Life; the one who **comes** to Me...’”—showing an active, on-going, lifelong, present tense, always coming to.

“...**shall never hunger**; and the one who believes [continuously] in Me **shall never thirst** at any time” (v 35). He is fulfilling these words spoken of by Isaiah the prophet, ‘They shall not hunger nor thirst.’

Isaiah 49:10: “...nor shall the heat nor sun strike them...” In other words, there isn’t going to be anything to destroy them—though they take this body, that’s meaningless—because *if* you have the Spirit of God you’re in the resurrection, so *nothing can!*

“...for He who has compassion on them shall lead them... [though everything that is done we are led] ...even by the **springs of water** He shall guide them” (v 10). There are two things that are very important about this. “...springs of water...” in Psa. 1, is called *river* or *by the river*.

Psalms 1:1: “Blessed is the man who does not walk in the counsel of the wicked... [thinking *your* own ways and doing *your* own thing] ...nor stand in the way of sinners... [*vs* the way of God] ...nor sit in the seat of the scornful.” Because you believe the Word of God, trust God and love God, you won’t be scornful.

Verse 2: “But his delight is in the **Law of the LORD**... [magnified by Christ in the New Testament] ...and in His Law does he meditate day and night. And he shall be like a tree planted by the **streams [rivers] of water**... [which we will, which we are] ...that brings forth its fruit in its season, and its leaf shall not wither, and all that he does shall prosper. The wicked are not so, but they are like chaff which the wind drives away. Therefore, the wicked shall not stand in the judgment... [they’re going to fall] ...nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous... [because they won’t be in the first resurrection] ...for the LORD knows the way of the righteous, but the way of the wicked shall perish (vs 2-6).

In John 7 let’s see where it talks about *rivers of living water*, the Holy Spirit. That’s what the prophecy in Isa. 49 is talking about, what Christ would do.

John 7:37: “Now, in the last day, the great day of the Feast... [ending the seventh day and beginning the eighth day] ...Jesus stood and called out, saying, ‘If anyone thirsts, let him come to Me and drink.’” Right at that time, they had the ceremony of water. The priest would go down to the pool of Shiloam, bring up ceremonial pots of water and pour it around the altar as the evening burnt offering was being offered and the seventh day was ending and the eighth day was beginning.

Verse 38: “‘The one who believes in Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.’ But this **He spoke concerning the Spirit, which those who believed in Him would soon receive; for the Holy Spirit was not yet given because Jesus was not yet glorified**” (vs 38-39).

Isaiah 49:10 “‘...for He who has compassion on them shall lead them; even by the springs of water He shall guide them. And I will make all My mountains into roads... [the way of life the way to come to God] ...and My highways shall be exalted. Behold, these shall come from far; and, lo, these from the north and from the west; and these from the land of Sinim” (vs 10-12).

Sinim refers to the Far East and, in some cases, refers to China, showing that it’s going to be a great and a profound thing that’s going to be done. All of this is said to overcome the discouragement of Isa. 49:4, where He was just temporarily discouraged.

Verse 13: “Sing, O heavens; and be joyful, O earth; and break out *into* singing, O mountains; for the LORD has comforted His people, and will have compassion upon His afflicted.” That’s both the *first* and *second* coming.

(go to the next track)

Isaiah 50 is important when you put it together with the Scriptures that follow, showing Christ as the Messiah. This is referring to Jesus’ training.

Isaiah 50:4: “The Lord GOD has given Me the tongue of the learned...” *He did!* When Christ came to the temple, at age 12, He knew and understood Hebrew, He sat down and questioned all the experts in it and they were astonished at His wisdom. Later, they said, ‘Where did this man get His understanding? He has never learned’—in *our* schools.

“...to know to help the weary *with* a word” (v 4). That’s the whole thing concerning the Gospel:

- to uplift
- to inspire

- to forgive sin
- to show salvation

Aren’t we all weary with sin? *Yes!*

“...He [the Father] awakens *Me* [Jesus] morning by morning, He awakens My ear to hear as one being taught” (v 4). This is showing how Jesus was taught of God the Father.

Let’s look at some Scriptures concerning that. All of these are in the book of John; I think it’s very interesting that it comes out there.

If you have the Father as your Teacher Who wakes you up every morning. I’m sure He did this before Mary got up, and I’m also sure that Mary knew virtually nothing about this. I’m sure that God the Father did it almost from day one, to watch over Him and to teach Him so that Christ would not sin, *even as an infant.*

John 5:17: “But Jesus answered them... [when they questioned Him about the healing] ...‘My Father is working until now... [*continuously* up to this time] ...and I work.’”. Christ didn’t understand that He was doing the spiritual work of healing and preaching. The Pharisees and scribes didn’t understand that.

Verse 18: “So then, on account of this *saying*, the Jews sought all the more to kill Him, not only because He had loosed the Sabbath...”—that is in *their* view. What He really did was loose the Sabbath from one of their burdens that you can’t carry your bed, which is only a bedroll, on the Sabbath. ***He didn’t break the Sabbath!***

I’ve had people write me. There was even a man who gave a sermon in Worldwide (Church of God) that Jesus taught us how to break the law, based upon his sermon. That shows how much he knew of the Scriptures; yet, he was a minister. There were people out there saying, ‘Ooooo!’—*not a spiritual clue, not understanding God’s Word! Amazing!*

“...but also *because* He had called God His own Father, making Himself equal with God” (v 18). Just like we know, as our children grow up, they become equal or greater than we are. So, if you say that you are the Son of God, You are making Yourself equal with God. He wasn’t making Himself equal with God; ***He was the Son of God!*** Therefore, He was equal with God; of course, again at the resurrection.

Verse 19: “Therefore, Jesus answered and said to them... [this reflects that teaching and that ‘seeing’ the Father] ...‘Truly, truly I say to you, the Son has no power to do anything of Himself, but only what **He sees the Father do...**’” Every time He

prayed He saw the Father. *You talk about direct contact, that's something!*

“...For whatever He does, these things the Son also does in the same manner.... [What sustained Him in this?] ...For the Father loves the Son, and shows Him everything that He Himself is doing” (vs 19-20). When did God show Him this?

- morning by morning
- day by day
- prayer by prayer

“...And He will show Him **greater works** than these, so that you may be filled with wonder” (v 20). What is the “...greater works...”? *The resurrection!*

Verse 21: “For even as the Father raises the dead and gives life, in the same way also, the Son gives life to whom He will. For the Father judges no one, but has committed all judgment to the Son” (vs 21-22). He really *knew*; He *understood*, no question about it.

Verse 30: “I have no power to do anything of Myself...” If you have that direct contact with God the Father—the greatest Being in the whole universe—on a daily basis, would you want to anything other than the will of the Father? *No! Absolutely not!*

This is the point that we need to come to. As I mentioned in a sermon concerning husband and wife relations, which is this: Do you really believe **all** the will of God?—all of it? *If you do, then you're going to want to do the will of God! If you want to do the will of God from your heart, then, half the battle is accomplished. Who gives the desire to do that but God the Father? That's what's so important. God is right there to help us just like He helped Jesus, but not quite in the same way. We have the Holy Spirit of God, that's how He helps us.*

“...but as I hear, I judge; and My judgment is just because I do not seek My own will but the will of the Father, Who sent Me. If I bear witness of Myself, My testimony is not true” (vs 30-31). Notice the humility of Christ. *That's something!*

Too many people are into ‘religion’ and not into the Word of God. If we get into the Word of God and let the Word of God speak to us, that's what it's for, not to go in there and pick out what we *think* it says. Put it together and let the Word of God speak to us. Then, we're going to learn a lot and we can put it together.

John 7:14: “But then, about the middle of the Feast, Jesus went up into the temple and was teaching. And the Jews were amazed, saying, ‘How does this Man know letters, having never been schooled?’” (vs 14-15)—in their schools. What's

really being said here (speculation): Don't you think that by this time in His ministry:

- with everything that Jesus was doing
- all the miracles that He was doing
- all the things that He was preaching

—that they checked out in every synagogue, with Hillel and Shammai and all the rabbis, and said, ‘Did you teach Jesus?’ The answer that would come back: *No! So, they knew.*

Verse 16: “Jesus answered them and said, ‘My doctrine [teaching] is not Mine, but His Who sent Me.... [He was taught of the Father and sent to do it] ...**If anyone desires to do His will**, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it is from God, or *whether* I speak from My own self. The one who speaks of himself is seeking his own glory; but He Who seeks the glory of Him Who sent Him is true, and there is no unrighteousness in Him’” (vs 16-18).

He was saying that He was taught of God. He was saying that He saw God. That all fulfills Isa. 50 where it says that He was taught ‘morning by morning.’

John 12:42: “But even so, many among the rulers believed in Him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *Him*, so that they would not be put out of the synagogue.” Political to the end. If you seek to please men you're not going to please God:

- We believe on Him, but we like all of our perks in the synagogue.
- How could I possibly give up my chief seats in the synagogue and all the finest food at the Feast that they bring?
- How could I believe on Him and use those guy's offerings that come in?

How many believed that in the Worldwide Church of God? Where are they today? *I tell you they are going to end up with nothing, no paycheck, no retirement and then maybe they'll repent.*

One of them who was there was Joseph of Arimathea and he repented. Nicodemus repented right at the end and took on the body of Christ and prepared it. Nicodemus came to Jesus by night ‘for fear of the Jews.’

Verse 43: “**For they loved the glory of men more than the glory of God.**” That's what happens when you start pleasing men. ‘Oh, how good you are!’ I don't want to hear that from anybody. If it isn't the Word of God, then I don't deserve anything. If I preach the Word of God, then it's God Who's doing it. The more I preach and the longer I preach, the more I understand it. If that's all that

Jesus did, should we not follow that same example? *Without a doubt!*

Verse 44: “Then Jesus called out and said, ‘The one who believes in Me does not believe in Me, but in Him Who sent Me.’” Even then He was going right back to God the Father.

Verse 45: “And the one who sees Me sees Him Who sent Me.” When Phillip said, ‘Show us the Father and that will be enough,’ Christ said, ‘Phillip, I’ve been with you all this time and you don’t know the Father? If you’ve seen Me you’ve seen Him.’

Verse 46: “I have come *as* a Light into the world...” Didn’t we read this about a Light to the Gentiles? *and* a Light to the world? Also to the Jews because the Jews were in darkness.

“...so that everyone who believes in Me may not remain [dwell] in darkness. But if anyone hears My words and does not believe, I do not judge him; for I did not come to judge the world, but to save the world” (vs 46-47). His time of judging will come when He returns.

Verse 48: “The one who rejects Me and does not receive My words has one who judges him; the word which I have spoken, that shall judge him in the last day. **For I have not spoken from Myself; but the Father Who sent Me, gave Me commandment Himself, what I should say and what I should speak**” (vs 48-49). There’s Jesus’ education:

- He saw the Father
- He was taught by the Father
- He didn’t do His own will but the will of the Father

Now, it shows that:

- He heard the Father
- the Father gave Him commandment
  - ✓ what He should say
  - ✓ what He should speak

Verse 50: “And I know that His commandment is eternal life. Therefore, whatever I speak, I speak exactly as the Father has told Me.” There it is; there is Christ’s education all right there in the book of John. *That’s something!*

We start into the part of the *suffering* and the commandment He knew would be to *suffer*. He knew what the end was going to be. That’s why He was temporarily discouraged for a little while.

Isaiah 50:5: “‘The Lord GOD has opened My ear... [we read that He heard] ...and I was not rebellious, nor turned away backwards.’”

I need to emphasize this again for the youth and the teenagers who want to go off and rebel and

reject God. You think that all that your mother and father is doing is just a bunch of ‘religious hokiness.’ You need to understand that it’s not. You also need to understand that Jesus was *your example*. He was not ‘rebellious nor turned away backwards’ from the time that He was born. That set us a good example to the point that, beginning in v 6:

- **He knew** that He was the Messiah
- **He knew** that He was going to have to go through this

He actually inspired the prophets to write these things. That’s why in the Garden of Gethsemane He had that temporary discouragement.

Verse 6: “**I gave My back to the smiters, and My cheeks to them that plucked off the hair; I did not hide My face from shame and spitting**,... [getting into the suffering that He would go through] ...for the Lord GOD will help Me; therefore, I have not been disgraced... [won’t be defeated] ...On account of this I have set My face like a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed” (vs 6-7). Remember when it said in the book of Luke that Jesus set His face to go to Jerusalem. He knew what He was going to.

Sometimes we need to set our faces ‘like a flint’ as far as God’s *Word* and God’s *way* is concerned. Some people might mistake that as being self-willed. That’s not a matter of being self-willed if the Spirit of God moves you to set your face and mind like a flint. Like He told Jeremiah, ‘I’m going to make your mind like a flint. Don’t worry what other people are going to say.’

That’s the kind of attitude that we need. Not in the wrong way, not to ‘one-upmanship’ or to be hard and miserable, but so that you can be *mentally and spiritually fortified to resist everything that people are going to bring against you* and don’t worry about it.

Verse 8: “*He is near who justifies Me...*” Wasn’t Christ justified?

1-Timothy 3:16: “And undeniably, great is the mystery of Godliness...” That is true.

- How was it that God became man in the flesh?
- How is it that we, as human beings in the flesh, are going to become God?

The ‘mystery of Godliness’ is great; it’s beyond human understanding. The only reason that we understand is because of the Spirit of God and the Word of God combined.

“...God was manifested in *the flesh*, **was justified in the Spirit...**” (v 16), *That’s quite a whole thing!* That means that because He took upon

Himself the sins of the whole world, *He justified everything that there is through God the Father!* When it says, ‘He is near Who justifies Me,’ Christ was justified. Not that He need to be justified from sin as we do, but He was justified in as much as it says that God was ‘justified in the Spirit’ so that He could make everything right.

*This is something!* When we understand what Christ went through, God the Father went through and then preserve it all in the Scriptures; and to write it such a way that only those with the Spirit of God can understand it. People in the world look at it and they can’t understand it. Like the prophecy, ‘Give it to the wise men and scribes,’ and say, ‘Read it.’ *I can’t read it; I can’t understand it.* The same way we understand ‘precept upon precept and line upon line,’ they totally misunderstand and can’t comprehend it because *their minds are closed and given over to blindness!* That is an absolute miracle! Think of it!

If you get a little discouraged in trying to grow and overcome and things like this, just realize the great miracle that God has done. It’s a marvelous thing and thank God for it, too.

Colossians 1:12: “Giving thanks to the Father, Who has made us qualified for the share of the inheritance of the saints in the Light.”

I remember when I first understood that was when we were down in the little meeting place at the Lutheran Church. We kept hearing many sermons in the past: ‘You must *qualify* for the kingdom. You must *qualify* for the kingdom. Do this and *qualify* for the kingdom. *No! It’s the Father that qualifies you!* If it’s not of works, what can you do to qualify for the kingdom? *If you:*

- love God
- serve God
- have faith in God
- do His will

He qualifies you. That’s what it’s talking about here. **“...qualified for the share of the inheritance of the saints in the Light.”**

Verse 13: “Who has personally rescued us from the power of darkness and has transferred us unto the kingdom of the Son of His love.” Obviously, we aren’t in the Kingdom of God now because ‘flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of God,’ as Paul said. We are under the authority of the jurisdiction of the Kingdom of God? *Christ is the Head!*

Verse 14: “In Whom we have redemption through His own blood, *even* the remission of sins... [all part of justification] ...Who is *the* image of the invisible God, *the* firstborn of all creation... [from

the dead] ...because by Him were all things created, the things in heaven and the things on earth, the visible and the invisible, whether *they be* thrones, or lordships, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by Him and for Him. And He is before all, and by Him all things subsist” (vs 14-17).

- Who was it that turned mankind over to Satan the devil? *God did!*
- Who was it that put ‘the law of sin and death’ in mankind? *God did!*
- Who was it that concluded all in unbelief? *God did!*
- Who was it that shut them up to darkness? *God did!*

That’s why **God** had to reconcile it all and be justified. In other words, *make everything right that He did in bringing a penalty for sin!*

Verse 18: “And He is the Head of the Body, **the Church;** Who is *the Beginning...* [or the Beginner] ...**the Firstborn from among the dead...**” He was the Firstborn of Mary, in His physical birth. Now, ...**the Firstborn from among the dead...**”

“...so that in all things He Himself might hold the preeminence. For it pleased *the Father* that **in Him all the fullness should dwell...** [you never run out because it’s eternal] ...and, having made peace through the blood of His cross, **by Him to reconcile all things to Himself...**” (vs 18-20). When He reconciles “...all thing to Himself...” —which will take place when New Jerusalem comes down out of heaven—that’ll be the completion of it. Then the full justification of God, by God, will be finished.

- Does that make sense?
- Do you understand that?

“...by Him, whether the things on the earth, or the things in heaven” (v 20). Even though Satan and the demons will not repent—which they won’t—all the evil that they have done has got to be made right, even though they suffer their penalty for all eternity. That’s why the things in heaven need to be straightened out and the heavens do, too!

Let’s come back to Isa. 50:8: “*He is near who justifies Me...*” Christ was justified as God in the flesh. There is no greater way that God could be justified than:

- to become a human being
- take upon Himself ‘the law of sin and death’
- live a perfect life and never sin so that He can reconcile all things to Himself

Furthermore, as we find in Heb. 2, that ‘He should taste death for every man.’ *That’s why He died!*

God—as *God*, as a Spirit Being—cannot die. That’s why He took on human flesh, so that He could die. There’s no other way that God could die. No human sacrifice *other than God* could satisfy and reconcile everything. It couldn’t be done. *He’s justified!*

“...who will contend with Me? Let us stand together; who *is* My adversary? Let him come near Me. Behold, the Lord GOD will help Me; who *is* he who shall condemn Me? Lo, they all shall grow old like a garment; the moth shall eat them” (vs 8-9) Showing that He is going to live forever and all the enemies will be gone.

Now, we’re getting into a section that, as Arnold Fruchtenbaum points out, runs in sections of three verses. Isa. 52:13-15 is really a continuation of:

Isaiah 50:6: “I gave My back to the smiters, and My cheeks to them that plucked off the hair; I did not hide My face from shame and spitting.”

Isaiah 52:13: “Behold, My Servant shall rule well; He shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high. **Many were astonished at Him—for His body was so disfigured—even His form beyond that of the sons of men**” (vs 13-14). Showing back in Isa. 50 the beatings that Christ took, being pummeled with clubs, fists, spit upon and ripping the hair out.

“...—**for His body was so disfigured—even His form beyond that of the sons of men**” (v 14)—showing the scourging which would take place, which is a cat-o’-nine-tails. In it they had nails and sharp pieces of glass attached to it. Whoever was the executioner of the scourging would be a big, strong man.

They took Jesus, tied Him to a pole, and they took a ‘cat-o-nine-tails’—the scourging—and it lapped all the way around His body. When they pulled back, it would rip the flesh open, so much so that in Psa. 22 He says, ‘I count all My bones.’ He could look down and see His bones. It was on the face and on the back. *Christ really went through it!*

Why did He do that? *That is a gruesome thing to go through!* He did it willingly; He did it according to the will of the Father and according to His own will, too. He made human beings and put in them ‘the law of sin and death’ who devise all of these wicked and evil things to:

- kill
- torture
- maim
- have more
- exterminate

and because the saints, themselves, would later be:

- killed
- torn apart
- torn limb from limb

- burned
- stabbed
- impaled
- beheaded

- That’s *why* He did it!
- That’s *why* He was justified!
- He took it upon Himself!

***For God nothing is impossible!*** He could wave the proverbial wand or the scepter—because a wand has to do with witchcraft—of rulership, wave it and take care of the problem. *He could, but that would not justify Him in what He did!* So, *He took it upon Himself!*

Satan was the one who was behind it to do it, because who betrayed Him? *Judas who was possessed of Satan!* I’m sure that in this Satan pretty well figured he had it; he was going to kill the Son of God! In that, which looked like a defeat, *was the greatest victory of all, because Jesus was resurrected!* We need to take that same view in our lives. Whatever may be, it’s going to turn out to be a victory because we will overcome, just like Christ did.

Notice why He did it, v 15: “So shall He sprinkle many nations; the kings shall shut their mouths because of Him...” When He returns, there isn’t going to be one more word to be said, ‘You’re the king of...? I want to know about Your Law, Lord. I want to go back to my country and I want to teach Your Law. Can you send some of these kings and priest You have to go back?’ *Yes, you and you go and we’ll escort you right back to your country. ‘Lord, I’ve repented and I want to be baptized.’ They’ll take care of that when you get back and that will start the whole thing for your country.*

*It’s going to stop their mouths!* “...for they will see *that* which was not told to them; yea, what they had not heard, shall they consider” (vs 15).

1-Corinthians 2:7: “Rather, we speak *the* wisdom of God in a mystery, *even* the hidden wisdom that God foreordained before the ages unto our glory, which not one of the rulers of this world has known... [that’s why when He returns the second time, it’s going to stop all their mouths] ... (for if they had known, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory)” (vs 7-8). I’ve often wondered about the Scripture and I’ve had a hard time understanding it; I’ll just tell you that. Because they were blinded and didn’t know, they **“...crucified the Lord of glory.”**

Verse 9: “But according as it is written, ***‘The eye has not seen, nor the ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God has prepared for those who love***

**Him.”** Things that have *not been seen*, that have *not been heard*, things that have *not been taught*, **until Christ came!**

Verse 10: “But God has revealed *them* to us by His Spirit, for the Spirit searches all things—**even the deep things of God.**” There’s no reason why today we can’t know as much about “...the deep things of God” *as God gives us time to live and understanding to understand.* All the glory goes to God; we just search it out. God is the One Who reveals it through His Spirit.

Verse 11: “For who among men understands the things of man except *by* the spirit of man which is in him? In the same way also, the things of God no one understands except *by* the Spirit of God. Now we have not received the spirit of the world, but the Spirit that *is* of God, so that we might know the things graciously given to us by God; which things we also speak, **not in words taught by human wisdom, but in words taught by the Holy Spirit in order to communicate spiritual things by spiritual means**” (vs 11-13). That’s why these are things never seen, never heard, **until Christ!**

We’ll see another aspect of this, talking about *not seeing and not hearing*. Isa. 64:1 is talking about His second coming. I just wonder what Isaiah thought when he finally put together all of these prophecies that he was given. He wrote this about 700 years before Christ. Here’s part of his thought:

Isaiah 64:1: “Oh that You would rend the heavens *and* come down, *that* mountains might quake at Your presence, as when the melting fire burns, the fire causes water to boil, to make Your name known to Your adversaries, *that* the nations may tremble at Your presence! When You did awesome things *which* we did not look for, You came down, the mountains quaked at Your presence” (vs 1-3).

Not only did he desire that, but in vision he saw that. Whenever Christ stepped on Mt. Sinai it was on fire and smoked altogether, the lava was just flowing because of the power and glory of God.

Verse 4: “And from ancient times men **have not heard, nor did they perceive, neither has the eye seen,** a God besides you Who acts on behalf of those who wait for Him.” Paul quoted it a little bit differently (1-Cor. 2).

Verse 5: “You meet him who rejoices and works righteousness, *those who* remembered You in Your ways. Behold, You were angry, for we sinned. We have continued in our sins a long time. How can we be saved?”

Isaiah 53:1: “Who has believed our report?.... [showing that He would be rejected]

...And to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed? For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant... [That’s referring to His childhood.] ...and as a root out of a dry ground...” (vs 1-2). You tie that back with Isa. 11:1 that out of the ‘stump of Jesse shall shoot forth a Branch.’

“...He has no form nor comeliness... [just an ordinary person] ...that we should look upon Him, nor beauty that we should desire Him. *He* is despised and rejected of men; a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief; and we hid as it were our faces from Him, He was despised, and we esteemed Him not” (vs 2-3). That why they didn’t believe.

It’s the same way. We have the same thing today, especially in ‘religious’ circles. When you begin really teaching the Truth, they don’t believe you because it doesn’t conform to their orthodoxy. They end up despising you and hating you. Think of what it was with Christ. They were after Him. The Mossad of the first century was after Christ in the form of the scribes, Sadducees, and Pharisees, looking for Him and *watching* Him. There was a prophecy we will see in the Psalms that He was the ‘song of the drunkards in derision.’ You could almost imagine some of those conversations that the scribes and Pharisees had:

- How could He be from God?
- He’s against every one of these traditions
- He doesn’t accept our person
- He never went to any one of our schools
- Who does He think He is?

*Despise and hate Him! Get rid of Him!* “...a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief...” (v 3).

If you were the only perfect person on earth, which He was, having the love of God in Him, which He did, and having the Spirit of God to see and understand, He knew the thoughts of people.

He said to Simon, ‘Why are you thinking this in your heart?’ He said to those who were criticizing Him when he healed the man who was let down through the roof, ‘Son, your sins be forgiven you.’ They were thinking, ‘Who but God can forgive sin?’ Jesus said, “Why do you say in your hearts, ‘Who but God can forgive sins? Which is easier to say, ‘Man take up your bed and walk or your sins be forgiven you?’ I say to you take up your bed and walk.” *That did it! They just gnashed their teeth and went off to find a way that they might kill Him!*

You need to understand that when Jesus is going around as a man in the flesh preaching and teaching, He had all these people stalking Him, watching Him and reporting on Him. If you thought that you were ever under ‘spiesville’ in whatever

church you were in, that was nothing. *They were there with Christ all the time!*

If you think that you've lived a bad life because people don't like you or don't accept you, remember that Christ bore that, too. Even His own brothers said, 'Why don't you go on up to Jerusalem and show Yourself?' (John 7). Even they didn't believe Him. *You talk about bearing all the sorrows and everything!*

From this point on, **He's the suffering Servant but the Servant sacrifice.**

Also referenced: Books:

- *Messianic Christology* by Arnold Fruchtenbaum
- *Code of Jewish Law* by Solomon Ganzfried and Hyman Goldin

Sermon: *Who Are the Two Witnesses and Elijah?*

FRC:nfs  
Translated: 01-20-15  
Proofed: bo—1-26-15

All Scripture from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter.

Scriptural References:

- 1) Matthew 5:17-18
- 2) Isaiah 40:3-8
- 3) Matthew 3:1-4
- 4) Luke 3:2-8
- 5) John 1:19-28
- 6) Isaiah 42:1-8, 6
- 7) Ephesians 2:11-19
- 8) 1-Peter 2:9-10
- 9) Isaiah 42:6
- 10) Isaiah 49:1-10
- 11) John 6:35
- 12) Isaiah 49:10
- 13) Psalms 1:1-6
- 14) John 7:37-39
- 15) Isaiah 49:10-13
- 16) Isaiah 50:4
- 17) John 5:17-22, 30-31
- 18) John 7:14-18
- 19) John 12:42-50
- 20) Isaiah 50:5-8
- 21) 1-Timothy 3:16
- 22) Colossians 1:12-20
- 23) Isaiah 50:8-9
- 24) Isaiah 50:6
- 25) Isaiah 52:13-15
- 26) 1-Corinthians 2:7-13
- 27) Isaiah 64:1-5
- 28) Isaiah 53:1-3

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Matthew 17
- Mark 7
- Matthew 23
- Revelation 20
- Isaiah 42:1-8
- Hebrews 2
- Psalms 22
- Isaiah 11:1
- John 7

## Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VI Suffering and Sacrifice of Christ

(Isaiah 52-53)

Fred R. Coulter

How did the Apostles preach Christ when they only had the Old Testament?

One day as I was walking out of my office, there were four cassette tapes up in the corner of one of the shelves on the bookcase. They'd been there for a long time, but I never looked at them to see what was in them. Lo and behold, these four tapes were the tapes done by Arnold Fruchtenbaum and it was *The Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament*.

I got his book called *Messianic Christology*, which is quite good. When he sticks to the prophecies of Christ in the Old Testament, he does fine. When he gets to some of the things in the New Testament, it just sort of falls apart. He does very good explaining the two of Elohim, but when he gets to the New Testament to placate the Protestants that he's connected with, he talks about the third person of the trinity. It's kind of one foot in and one foot out. He really has done a good job in everything concerning it. So, I'm using his book as kind of a guide to go through, because he has it laid out so well. However, I add quite a bit more to it than he has in his book.

Isa. 52:13-15 follows all the way through to the end of Isa. 53:12. That is a whole section about the suffering of the Messiah. I think it's very interesting that Arnold Fruchtenbaum calls the LORD, 'YHVH': *Jehovah*, all the way through. He considers that the proper pronunciation from what I'm able to determine. I was rather surprised at that.

Each of these sections, all the way through Isa. 53:12, are broken down into series of three verses. We'll take them three at a time and each one tells a story.

Isaiah 52:13: "Behold, My Servant shall rule well..." All of these have to do with the Messiah as the Servant, and Fruchtenbaum calls the Messiah the God/man, which is a very interesting terminology. We'll see a couple of instances as to why.

"...He shall be exalted... [This has to do not only with what He did but also at His resurrection.] ...and extolled, and be very high (v 13).

Then it comes to His humility: Verse 14: "Many were astonished at Him—for *His body* was so disfigured—even His form beyond that of the sons of men." This was talking about how He was going to go through the scourging. The scourging is really quite a terrible thing when we come to understand this.

There was a covenant between God the Father and Jesus Christ when They were both Elohim, before One became the Father and the other One became the Son {note sermon: *The Covenant Sacrifice Between God the Father and Jesus Christ*}. There are certain things, which reveal that They had an understanding and a covenant before Christ entered into this. He knew that He was going to die. He knew that He was going to be scourged within an inch of His life and then die.

Here it shows the suffering that He would suffer at it. The scouring was really quite a thing that would take place. It was a cat-o-nine-tails with glass and nails in the end of it. When they would tie a person to a pole and whip them with it, it would go all around the body and it would rip everything open. This is what it's talking about.

In *Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament* #5 I mentioned how that God was justified in everything that He did through the crucifixion. God is the One Who gave us the nature we have. God is the One Who made us subject to sin and vanity. So, in order to be justified in what God did, Jesus took upon Himself the very same thing that we do, the very same thing that we have, took upon Himself our nature.

In the mind of a Jew it's very difficult to comprehend how God, Who is eternal, can die. That, in itself, is almost a contradiction.

- How can someone who is eternal die?
- If someone who is eternal dies, then what is eternity?

Christ had to become a man in order for that to be accomplished. When you consider all the brutality that men have done to men and the killing that they have done to each other in all the wars, Christ took all that on Himself. That's why:

"...His body was so disfigured—even His form beyond that of the sons of men. So shall He sprinkle many nations..." (vs 14-15). This is using 'without *the* shedding of blood there is no remission of sins.' This is giving a preview of the remission of sins, which is going to come in Isa. 53.

"...for they will see *that* which *was* not told to them; yea, what they had not heard, shall they consider" (v 15)—which is: How can God die? So, He became a human being to do it.

Isaiah 53:1: "Who has believed our report? And to whom is **the arm of the LORD** revealed?"

For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground; He has no form nor comeliness that we should look upon Him, **nor beauty that we should desire Him. He is despised and rejected of men;** a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief; and we hid as it were our faces from Him, He was despised, and we esteemed Him not” (vs 1-3).

**Verse 1:** “...And to whom is **the arm of the LORD** revealed?” The arm of the Lord is going to rule for God. We’re going to see the ‘arm of the Lord’ and talking about God and doing the things that He’s going to do.

Isaiah 40:10: “Behold, the Lord GOD will come with a strong *hand*, and **His arm shall rule for Him;** behold, His reward *is* with Him, and His work before Him”—for the work that Christ would do.

Isaiah 51:5 “My righteousness *is* near; My salvation has gone out, and **My arms shall judge the people;** the isles shall wait upon Me, and **on My arm they shall trust.**” How many remember the song that’s in *Messiah* by Handel, which says, ‘He will carry them in His arms and those who are with child He will lead gently’? The melody escapes me but I remember that part of it. It talks about *the arm of the Lord*.

Verse 9: “Awake! Awake! Put on strength, **O arm of the LORD.**” That’s referring to Christ. We have it in Isa. 53:1.

It also talks about the prophecy that Christ would not be accepted, that He would be rejected. As a matter of fact, it’s very interesting that Arnold Fruchtenbaum made this observation, which is true, that every Messiah that the Jews have proclaimed to be the Messiah, has been a false one, **every single one!**

That’s why when the Bar Kokhba Revolution took place the punishment was so severe at that time. Rabbi Akiva proclaimed Bar Kokhba as the Messiah. They went out and warred against the Romans and they actually got back most of the Holy Land. Then, Rome came with a vengeance and it ended in the account of Masada, where they had to build up and get up to the city of Masada. At that time the Romans just determined to scrape the earth, just destroy Judea, destroy the Jews, and that was all the punishment for following the false messiah and for rejecting the true Messiah.

#### **Isaiah 53:2:**

Here are some of the reasons that they would disbelieve:

- He wasn’t big
- He wasn’t strong

- He wasn’t handsome
- He wasn’t mighty in the way that men look at might
- He wasn’t anything that they could desire as a great political leader

Just an ordinary human being: “...nor beauty that we should desire Him.”

**Verse 3:** On top of it: “*He is despised and rejected of men...*”

I think it’s important that all of us who have the Spirit of God have to go through a time and period when *we* are despised and rejected of men. *Every single one of us!* That’s part of growing in the character of Christ, so that we understand how Christ felt.

When you really understand it, except for Christ’s communication with God the Father, He was really alone, very, very isolated. Even with His apostles around Him, He was still very, very alone and carrying the sorrows of the world.

Think about this for a minute, v 3: “*He is despised and rejected of men; a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief...*” This gives us hope! Whenever you’re in that position, go to God and lay it before God saying that *Christ bore all this for me!*

- *help me* to bear this burden
- *help me*, with Christ in me, to be able to cope with this
- *give me* the strength of Christ
  - ✓ He was alone
  - ✓ He was rejected
  - ✓ He was despised
- *help me*

I know that I’ve gone through times when I’ve felt that, to where I was at the very bottom. Everybody’s going to have to come to the bottom. When you’re at the bottom you’re all alone. There’s virtually no one there to help you. If your husband or wife is like Job’s wife, then you don’t get any help there either. She said, ‘Curse Him and get it over with and die.’ Not very much encouragement for what he was going through.

I know that in my circumstance, I just had to go to Christ and say, ‘God, I just don’t know what’s going on.’ Here I was 49-years-old:

- no job
- no severance
- no nothing
- four children
- a house

Of course, if you send out resumes that you’re a

used reject preacher, guess how many answers you get back? *Nada!*

I didn't realize for years why. The answer was: ***God doesn't want the Church run by committee or dictatorship. He wants it run with Christ as the Head!*** When I finally learned the lesson, I said that now I understand! You won't learn the lesson immediately. Christ went through the whole thing. His grief and His sorrow was greater than ours, because He was the Creator.

John talks about this a little bit; I think it's profound, John 1:1: "***In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.***" *That is something!*

Here's how despised He was, v 10: "He was in the world, and the world came into being through Him, but the world did not know Him." In the flesh, did Christ seek any recognition? *No!*

I think that's the way that it needs to be with all of those. With our past experience with the ministry, what recognition do we need as ministers? *We don't need any!* What we need to do is preach Christ and let Christ recognize us, however He wants to do that, one way or the other.

Verse 11: "He came to His own... [His own tribe of Judah] ...and His own **did not receive Him**"—to welcome in a warm bosom embrace.

Verse 12: "But as many as received Him, to them He gave authority to become *the* children of God, *even* to those who believe in His name; who were not begotten by bloodlines, nor by *the* will of the flesh, nor by *the* will of man, but *by the will of God*" (vs 12-13). That backs up the verse, ***no one can come to Me unless the Father, Who sent Me, draws him.***

That's why when you see some of these modern Churches that open everything up to whomever comes in. 'You like rock music? We'll have light rock music. If you like it, we'll do it.' You have to receive Christ, not the world. That's the thing that's so important. This also bears it up. This shows that you can't come to God, you can't be a part of what God has unless God does something individual and dynamic in your life by calling you. I don't know about you, but I can look back and I can remember the time when God began dealing with me. No doubt about it in my mind. If you have the Holy Spirit of God you will also know that.

Christ was utterly alone. His mother loved Him, His disciples were hardheaded all the way through, and He had to deal with them.

John 2:23: "Now, when He was in Jerusalem at the Passover, during the Feast, many believed on

His name, as they observed the miracles that He was doing. But Jesus did not entrust Himself to them, because He knew all *men*; and He did not need anyone to testify concerning man, for He Himself knew what was in man" (vs 23-25). Why? *Because He put it in man!*

Jesus was made in the likeness of ***sinful flesh***, not in the likeness of *flesh*, but in the likeness of ***sinful flesh***. This shows how absolutely great that the plan of God is, that He would do that. What He sentenced every man and woman to, He took upon Himself as Creator. *That is awesome! That is mind blowing! But He did!*

Isaiah 53:3: "...and we hid as it were our faces from Him, He was despised, and we esteemed Him not." Isn't that the way that people do when trouble is brewing and things are bad?

- you don't want to have anything to do with them
- you get away from them
- you leave them alone and isolated

That's how Christ was. That's how the nation of Judea treated Him. Then you go through all the details about all the things that took place at the crucifixion.

Verse 4: "Surely **He** has borne our infirmities... [that's why He did it] ...and carried our sorrows; yet, we esteemed **Him**... [the Jews.] ...stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But **He** was wounded for our transgressions; **He** was crushed for our iniquities; the chastisement of our peace was upon **Him**; and with **His** stripes we ourselves are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned each one to his own way; and the LORD has laid on **Him** the iniquity of us all" (vs 4-6) All the way through you will see the singular pronouns *He/Him/His*.

The way that the Jews get around this is that in their synagogue readings they do not read Isa. 52:13-53:12; they skip over it. Another way they get around it is they misinterpret it. They say that this applies to the nation of Israel and as during the Holocaust the Jews were a burnt offering unto God for the salvation of the world. That's the way it's presented. But the Jews never remain silent, they always write and complain. So, it could not apply to the nation of the Jews ever; but to the One Who became Jesus Christ. It could never apply to anyone other than that. Notice who He did this for. He carried **our** grief. Matthew, Mark, Luke and John brings out the complete fulfillment of it in the New Testament.

**Verse 4:** "Surely He has borne our infirmities, and carried our sorrows; yet, we

esteemed Him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But **He** *was* wounded **for our transgressions...**" (vs 4-5).

I think it's profound that while Christ was on the cross dying, for those very ones who did it to Him, He said, 'Father, forgive them, they know not what they do.' You talk about Christ having not only a perfect attitude, but He had a total love.

Think about it. We are told that while we're the enemies of God, because of the love of God, He sent His own Son to bring us salvation. Christ did that, *personally*, while they were crucifying Him—'Father, forgive them, they know not what they do.' He bore the sorrows and the iniquities of those right there who just nailed the nails in His hands and His feet.

**Verse 5: "...and with His stripes we ourselves are healed."** I go back over this and look at healing. I've seen a lot of very miraculous healings. I've seen where God has also worked through things like with an operation or something like that. I've seen both ends of the spectrum.

I remember one woman who had breast cancer. Her breast was as black as a lump of coal and my wife saw it. It was in Salt Lake City, and I was asked to come and anoint her. I had the whole Church fast and pray about it. I went there and anointed her. You could smell death when you walked in. They took me into the room where she was. Here's this woman emaciated down to:

- skin and bone and nothing
- pain and misery and agony
- racking terrible

At that point you feel so inadequate. You know there is nothing *you* can do. I just knelt down—there was a deacon with me—and I remember praying: 'Oh God, You know, if it is Your will to heal her. If not, let her die and end the misery.' That was about as long as the prayer was. *She was totally healed! In ten days, she was up walking about! The cancer was all gone!*

She did the things that she could to help cleanse her body and things like that, which is perfectly all right. God would have us do that. Remember that He told Hezekiah to make a poultice out of the figs. *That was really something!* Later on, Rod Meredith had to come out and see if it was real or not.

Christ took those upon Him. I think we need to have a whole lot more confidence in the promises of God. I beseech all of you to continue praying so that the brethren and the ministers—I include myself in that—will have *the kind of belief* and *the kind of faith* that comes from Jesus Christ; that people can

be healed and that we claim the promises of Christ, not in an arrogant way, but in a way that God has given them to us so we can be healed, because: **"...with His stripes we ourselves are healed."** We'll see that Peter brought that out very clearly.

I know the difficulties and problems that people have had with sickness, disease, childbirth and things like this. It's not wrong to help, assist and do the things that are necessary that way. Even the doctors can only do what they do if they follow the laws that God created in the body anyway. They don't do any healing. God does the healing—one way or the other—through the processes in the body, whether it's a natural process or a miracle, just suddenly raising people up.

1-Peter 2:21: "For to this you were called because **Christ also suffered for us...**" Anytime you're suffering, anytime you're going through anything, you can go to Christ and say, 'Father and Christ—it's not wrong to pray to Christ—O Lord:

- We know what You went through!
- You've given Your Word!
- You have suffered for us!
- Help us!
- Uplift us!
- Give us Your strength!
- Help us through this time of suffering!

**"...leaving us an example, that you should follow in His footsteps"** (v 21). Just think of this, everything in our lives has to do with following in the steps of Christ.

- If you're suffering, Who is *in you* suffering with you? *Christ!*
- If you are in pain, Who is *in you* also experiencing the pain but Christ, through the power of the Holy Spirit?

He knows what it's like. We need to ask God to help us develop the very mind and character of God while we are going through these things.

I'll tell you another thing, too, that you will learn: You will be reluctant to condemn anybody for the suffering and difficulties that they are going through. You will never, ever again say that that person deserves it. *Never again!* You will have understanding, love and compassion and you'll realize that this is for our benefit.

Verse 22: "Who committed no sin... [we suffer because we sin] ...neither was guile found in His mouth; Who, when He was reviled, did not revile in return; *when* suffering, He threatened not, but committed *Himself* to Him Who judges righteously; **Who Himself bore our sins within His own body on the tree...** ['stauros'] ...so that we, **being dead to sins, may live unto righteousness; by Whose stripes you were healed"** (vs 22-24).

This is *physical* healing. There is a *spiritual* healing, but the spiritual healing comes with the Holy Spirit. The physical healing comes with His stripes—two different things. When they confuse the two and say, ‘His stripes have nothing to do with our physical healing,’ then, why was His body beaten so badly?

Isaiah 53:5: “**But He was wounded for our transgressions; He was crushed...** [bruised (KJV)] **...for our iniquities...**” This being ‘bruised’ goes all the way back to:

Genesis 3:15: “And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; **He [Christ] will bruise your head, and you [serpent] shall bruise His heel.**”

I know that in reading *The Two Babylons* by Alexander Hislop, he points out in that book, all the nations in old times, understood that the Messiah would die for the sins of the people and that He would be *bruised* by the serpent. All of these myths and legends that have come about involving Nimrod, Semiramis and Horus all revolve around taking these qualities and applying them to the pagan deities.

The *true* Christ, Isaiah 53:5: “...*was* crushed for our iniquities; **the chastisement of our peace was upon Him...**” How do you have peace with God? *Through the stripes of Christ!* He took the chastisement upon Himself that *we* could have peace with God. *That’s really something!* God has got the infinite capacity to undo all wrong through this method, because He took it upon Himself.

“...and with His stripes we ourselves are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned each one to his own way...” (vs 5-6). Isn’t that the pull that is *always there* with human nature? *Yes, indeed, to go your own way!* ‘There is a way that seems right to a man, but the end thereof is the way of death.’

Isaiah 53:6: “...**and the LORD has laid on Him the iniquity of us all**”—just laid it right on Him. When Jesus was there on the cross dying, He was bearing the sins of the whole world: ***past, present and future.*** That’s why it was such a fantastic thing!

That’s why when you accumulate all of the prophecies concerning Christ and accumulate all of the accounts of it given in the Gospels and in the rest of the New Testament, you have perhaps 40% of the entire Bible revolving around the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, one way or the other. It was such a profound thing that God would become a man so that He could die. That’s how profound it was.

Verse 7: He was oppressed, and He was afflicted; yet, He opened not His mouth....” Quite

different from us. What do we do? *Start griping and complaining and all that sort of thing!* He didn’t open His mouth, not one word. That’s the character of God.

“...He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter; and as a sheep before its shearers is dumb, so He opened not His mouth” (v 7).

When I was in Boise, Idaho, we had a man who worked in the slaughter house. He had a sermonette just before the Passover and he was a man who only had an eighth grade education. He wasn’t eloquent in his speech. His sermonette was probably only eight or nine minutes long, but it was of *lasting* effect.

In working in the slaughter house, he explained how they slaughter the lambs and so forth. First of all, they shoot them in the head and then they string them up by the hind quarters. Then they slit the throat so all the blood will come out. His job at this time was to slit the throat and let the blood out. Here he is preparing for a sermonette just before a Passover. Here comes in this one lamb that the bullet glanced off the skull and it wasn’t dead. I never will forget how he said that he stood there with a knife and he looked down at that lamb hanging upside down and it just moved it’s head and looked him right in the eye. He just had to drop the knife and get out of there and go in the men’s room. He was completely overwhelmed with that experience; to experience that just right before the Passover.

When he gave the sermonette on that, that was something. You could have heard a feather drop. Then he said, ‘***Brethren, He did this for us!***’ Like a ‘lamb to the slaughter, He opened not His mouth.’

He was taken from prison. That’s why He had to go to Pilate and Herod; v 8: “By oppression and judgment He was taken away; and with His generation who did consider that He was cut off out of the land of the living; for the transgression of My people He *was* stricken. And He made His grave with the wicked, and **with the rich in His death**; although He had done no violence, nor *was any* deceit in His mouth” (vs 8-9).

This is the kind of character that God wants us to grow in with His Spirit. This is why the battle of human nature is so fierce and why it’s so important that we really:

- study the Word of God
- know the Word of God
- have it written in our heart and mind
  - ✓ these are *eternal* things
  - ✓ this gives us understanding

- ✓ this gives us the mind of Christ
  - true compassion
  - true mercy
  - true love

—because we see what Christ has done. He lets us go through our trials in a little ‘mini’ way, so that we can also experience some of these things, to know what He experienced. *He did it all for us!*

It’s interesting how that there were two robbers—one on the right hand, one on the left hand—so, He was counted as a criminal. Criminals were taken out and they were buried in a criminal grave, kind of like an open pit and that’s it; or they were thrown out into the fire in the Valley of Hinnom, one of the two.

This time there wasn’t enough time for it. I don’t know what they did with the two robbers, but what they did with Christ, He was buried with the rich because Joseph of Arimathea had a tomb right there and it was his own tomb, which he made for himself. That’s where Jesus was buried, to fulfill these prophecies.

Stop and think about it. If every Word of God is true—which it is; if every prophecy that God has given is going to come to pass, which it will; then everything that was done and prophesied concerning Christ had to happen *exactly* as the Scriptures say.

That’s why Matthew, in particular, goes through and says, ‘This was done to fulfill the word spoken of by Isaiah the prophet, which says...’ You study through Matthew and you will see that he says that in almost every chapter that he writes. “...nor was any deceit in His mouth”; may we all come to that point.

Verse 10: “Yet, the LORD willed to crush Him and He has put Him to grief: You shall make His life an offering for sin.... [here’s kind of a contradiction]: ...**He shall see His seed...**” That has to obviously do with the resurrection. This is going to be those who come into the Family of God when Christ and the Bride are married. Those will be Christ’s seed. Right now we’re the seed of the Father. We have the sperma of the Father in our mind; we are the children of the Father. Christ will also be a Father after He marries the Church and the Church and Christ bring people into the Kingdom of God. Then He will also be a Father. At that time, God the Father will be God the Grandfather, in that particular case.

“...He shall prolong His days... [by the resurrection] ...and that the purpose [pleasure] of the LORD might prosper in His hand. He shall see of the travail of His soul...” (vs 10-11). That’s quite a

profound thing when you go through Psalms 23. I learned more going back through studying and preparing for this—more understanding of the sacrifice of Christ—than any other time and I’ve been a minister since 1965.

(go to the next track)

We are to *grow in grace and knowledge*, and that’s how we do it, studying of the Word. The more you study the Scriptures and go over and over them again, the more you’re going to learn because God has packed the Truth just so tightly in all of the Scriptures. You’ll find that there are many precepts that come out of a verse. One time you study it you’ll learn this. Another time you study it you’ll learn something else. Another time you study it, ‘Oh, that ties in with this and that ties in with that.’ In going through Psalm 23, it was amazing.

Verse 11: “He shall see of the travail of His soul. He shall be fully satisfied....” God the Father shall see the travail of His soul and God the Father will be satisfied *with* His sacrifice.

*If* you once have the sacrifice of Christ applied to you for the forgiveness of sin and receiving of the Holy Spirit, it is a profound thing *if* you go back on that and *if* you turn your back on God. If you know of any brethren that are close to doing that, you make contact with them. If nothing else, at least give them a warning:

- you cannot turn your back on Christ
- you cannot turn your back on the Word of God
- you cannot turn your back on the laws and commandments of God

You cannot do it! Stop and think! Get back to the Bible, really read it and really understand it. To show you how important this is:

Hebrews 10:4: “**Because it is impossible for the blood of bulls and goats to take away sins.** For this reason, when He comes into the world, He says, ‘**Sacrifice and offering You did not desire, but You have prepared a body for Me**’” (vs 4-5). A dual meaning: The body that *He* prepared as a human body and also to the Church, which is the Body of Christ.

Verse 6: “**You did not delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin.**” ...but in ‘the travail of His soul,’ He was satisfied—wasn’t He? *Yes, God the Father was!*

Verse 7: “Then said I, ‘Lo, I come (as it is written of Me in the scroll of the book) **to do Your will, O God.**’” This is part of the covenant that Christ had with the Father while He was in the flesh.

Verse 9: “Then He said, ‘Lo, I come to do Your will, O God.’ He takes away the first *covenant* in order that He may establish the second *covenant*; by Whose will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ **once for all**” (vs 9-10). *That is why the Passover is so important!* The whole plan of God hinges on that, the sacrifice of Christ; that God would:

- give up being God to become a human being
- take on sinful human flesh
- never sin
- have all the pulls of the flesh
- have Satan after Him all the time and still never sin

Yet say, ‘Come to me you who are heavy laden and take My burden, for it is light and I will forgive your sins.’

Isn’t that something? You talk about total love! That’s why it couldn’t be any other human being. If any other human being was perfect, like Job, what would happen? All you’d do is brag and boast how perfect you are and how God had to give you eternal life. Here it is, the *gift of eternal life through what Christ has done!*

“...we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ **once for all**” (v 10). Not just *us*, lest we get so cloistered in thinking, ‘Well, God has called us, therefore, we’re so special that we can hate and condemn the world.’ *No!* We have to condemn the world for sin, but let Christ take care of the world. He will! He’s perfectly able of taking care of it.

John 1 shows the whole process of how, through the grace of God and the blood of Christ, that we have continuous access to forgiveness. This is something that we need. Once you understand that more, and once you really begin to grasp the love that God has for you in this, the more that you’re going to desire to do the will of God. Just like it said of Christ, “...Lo, I come to do Your will, O God” (v 9).

The more you desire that the more that you see that you need to have your life purged of sin and your nature changed. The more that you desire to sin not the more you see the need for the sacrifice of Christ. It’s like a whole package all together. Here’s how it works:

1-John 1:7: “However, if we walk in the light, as He is in the Light... [He is the Light of the world] ...*then* we have fellowship with one another, and **the blood of Jesus Christ, His own Son, cleanses us from all sin.**”

Please understand this: ***Nothing can substitute for the sacrifice of Christ! Nothing!*** No work, not even commandment-keeping can substitute for the sacrifice of Christ. Why? *Commandments cannot forgive!* Commandments define Law and the penalty of breaking Law is sin. Only the sacrifice of Christ and the blood of Christ can forgive sin. That is the way that God has determined it to be.

On the program *60 Minutes* they had a report about the Catholic Church in Ireland (this practice ended in 1980). They would take these young girls who would be condemned by a nun, or a priest, or a bishop—especially if they ever got caught kissing or if they ever got in a situation where they committed fornication, or especially if they got pregnant—they were swooped up out of their homes and sent off to these convent laundries. They had to slave work in these laundries in a hateful environment:

- up at five in the morning
- working at seven in the morning
- all the while they were scrubbing with their hands
- didn’t have any washing machines or anything like that

for all of the diocese, even the meat markets that they had. These poor women had to work from seven in the morning to five at night and then eat, pray and go to bed.

All the time that they were scrubbing and washing, they had to be praying. They had to pray out loud because they were being monitored by the ‘Mother Superior’ to see whether they were doing it. If they didn’t do it, then they had more depravation in their rations and everything like this. *It was a prison!* Slave labor clear up to 1980. They took these girls:

- changed their names
- took the babies away from them
- put the babies in the orphanage

Some of the mothers could even see their children up there, but they couldn’t talk to them, or anything. *They didn’t exist! No one talked about it!*

I thought: What does the Bible say? *A leopard can’t change it’s spots!* The Catholic Church can’t change it’s ways. Not any one of those works forgave any sin. *Not one!* If you have a work that you figure forgives sin, you’re saying that the sacrifice of Jesus Christ is not good enough.

Not any of the women got paid for what they were doing. Finally, this one woman who sued the church got the equivalent of \$8.00—30 shillings. When you read in Rev. 18 about how that Babylon

the Great deals in the souls of slaves, it is still to this day.

That was an eye-opener to me. I felt sorry for those poor women. Their lives:

- were broken and crushed
  - ✓ with intimidation
  - ✓ with fear
  - ✓ with loneliness

by the church

- that they were born into
- trusted in
- were told to look up to
- how 'holy' the pope is

Then to be carted off to this laundry to work your hands, fingers and your life to the bone, for the sake that you committed a sin in your lifetime. Now the priest has declared that you must **work off** your salvation and **work off** this sin. No, you don't. Here's how it's done:

Verse 8: "If we say that we do not have sin, we are deceiving ourselves, and the Truth is not in us. If we confess our own sins..." (vs 8-9)—**to God**, not a priest. No man can forgive spiritual sin, but that's how the Catholics control—through the 'confessional.'

"...He is faithful and righteous, to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness" (v 9). That is a continuous on-going thing. What is the model prayer that Jesus said? *Forgive us our sins as we also forgive those who sin against us, or trespass against us!* When you understand that you have your sins forgiven, then you need to be very ready, willing and able to forgive other people's sins. What did Jesus say? If you don't, your Father will not forgive your sins!

1-John 1:9: "If we confess our sins..."—after 200 'hail Mary's,' 400 'our fathers' and 700 genuflections. **NO!**

Verse 9: "If we confess our own sins **He is faithful and righteous, to forgive us our sins...**" When? *When we confess them!* I know that our human nature—my human nature is the same way—that when I sin, I feel so bad that I think that I'll wait until I'm in a better attitude and then go to God. **You need to repent right then!** The reason you're in a bad attitude is because you caught yourself sinning. The only way to get rid of it, is to repent right there and not wait until later.

In effect, what you're saying is, 'Well, God, Your sacrifice only applies when **I'm** ready for it.' **NO!** It applies *when you confess!* Just

think how much more encouragement that you have when:

- you understand that
- you live by that
- you apply it
- you know that He is faithful and just

This is to inspire you so that you will also have the resolve to *not* sin. That's why John wrote this.

Verse 10: "If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His Word is not in us."

1-John 2:1: "My little children, **I am writing these things to you so that you may not sin...**" The whole purpose of it is, not to have license to commit sin, but to have forgiveness *when* you sin so that you will want to have the frame of mind and ask God for the help and strength that you do not sin.

If you have never experienced that, then ask God to help you experience that and you will 'grow in grace and knowledge.' You will find that you will not be sinning with the same old pull that you always had. When you try and overcome sin yourself you're using the wrong vehicle.

Can carnal nature overcome carnal nature? **No!** Carnal nature can only shift fields. You may shift from being bad in this aspect, to being good. Then over in another area you will shift over to whether you're going to be bad or sinful in that area. It just shifts. That's why this, 'pull yourself up by your bootstraps' never works, because you can't change human nature with human nature. That's why we have the Word of God written to us so we won't sin.

"...And yet, **if anyone does sin**, we have an Advocate with the Father; Jesus Christ *the* Righteous; and **He is the propitiation for our sins**; and not for our sins only, but also for *the sins of* the whole world" (vs 1-2). Lest we get to thinking that somehow, because God has called us we deserve it and the world deserves condemnation. **NO!** That's not how it works. Who knows, if God grants repentance to someone else, what will their life be? *It'll be great!* We know God's plan and how that's all going to work out.

Isaiah 53:11: "...By His knowledge shall My righteous Servant justify many; and **He shall bear their iniquities.**" How does He justify us? **By grace!**

{Note sermon series: *Epistle of Romans*. This shows how justification comes. Rom. 3 shows

that justification means to be put in right standing with God by having your sins forgiven.}

Romans 3:20: “Therefore, by works of law...” One of the unfortunate things that was done in translating into the English—if you have an Interlinear look at it—there is no definite article. It is: “...by works **of law**...” A general statement meaning: *any work of any law*. Since this is written to the Romans and preserved for us today, means it goes:

- to the whole world
- to any religion
- to any law

whether it be:

- Buddhists
- Hindu
- Moslem
- Catholic
- Orthodox

“...there shall no flesh be justified before Him... [that comes by the sacrifice of Christ] ...for **through the law is the knowledge of sin**.... [here’s the verse that trips them all up]: **...But now, the righteousness of God that is separate from law has been revealed**...” Here’s where the Protestants say that we don’t have to have the Law of God. I just got a letter the other day that I don’t understand grace because grace is grace and we don’t need law.

*Without* (KJV) in English, has the meaning to us *the absence of*. I am without sight. That means you do not have any sight. I am without my car, meaning it’s not here.

This is not ‘*without law*’ that you do not exist in a lawless society. This means ‘*separate from the law*.’ In other words, the law is one thing on one hand, grace is another thing on the other hand, but you have the two of them together. You cannot have grace without law and you cannot have law without grace.

“...*the righteousness of God that is separate from law has been revealed, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets*” (v 21). I remember the first time I read that, I just crossed my eyes and I was almost in hopeless confusion. Here I was:

- keeping the Sabbath for the first time
- keeping the commandments of God
- here at God’s college

I read this and said, ‘How can that be?’—‘without law,’ yet, ‘witnessed by the Law and the Prophets.’ So, it’s “...separate from...”

Verse 22: “Even *the* righteousness of God *that is* through *the* faith of Jesus Christ, toward all and upon all those who believe; for there is no

difference.” You have to believe in the sacrifice of Christ. *That is what justifies!* Nothing else justifies except the sacrifice of Christ and His blood.

Verse 31: “Are we, then, abolishing *the* law through faith? MAY IT NEVER BE! Rather, we are establishing *the* law.” Why? When you are freely justified of God this is to give you incentive, love and understanding to want to keep the laws of God and you *establish* law; you don’t do away with it.

Romans 6:1: “What then shall we say? Shall we continue in sin, so that grace may abound? MAY IT NEVER BE! We who died to sin...[which is the transgression of the law] ...how shall we live any longer therein?” (vs 1-2).

Now we come to something that is very profound in relationship to the sacrifice of Christ. I’ve adjusted the Passover ceremony in accordance with this. The death of Jesus Christ was *the covenant death*. It goes all the way back to Abraham coming on down. We have all that in the book, *The Christian Passover*. When you are baptized, you are dying a covenant death. Did you know that? It is not just an entrance into a Church. Paul explains that here:

Verse 3: “Or are you ignorant that we, as many as were baptized into Christ Jesus, were baptized **into His death? Therefore, we were buried with Him through the baptism into the death**...” (vs 3-4). Baptism means to be joined in His death. The Greek literally means *knit together*. That’s what baptism pictures.

That’s why many baptisms that you can go back and think on, how many people had that in mind, or even understood it when they were baptized? *Not very many!* It is a covenant death. You are saying that in this covenant death, conjoined with Christ, that if *you* turn your back on Christ *you* have pledged *your death* in a future lake of fire.

The mercy and grace of God is greater than most people give credit; but the liability to us is greater than we have ever thought, inasmuch as that the pledge of *our* death is into the covenant with Christ. God did this great and marvelous thing to become a human being and take upon Him ‘the law of sin and death’ and *die that death on the cross*. **We are conjoined into His death at baptism** because we want our lives covered with the blood and the sacrifice of Jesus Christ. Then it says that we are to ‘walk in newness of life.’ Then we have the promise of the resurrection—don’t we? You have to come to the *gruesome reality* of it first, but then you come to the *glorious understanding* of it, that there is the resurrection.

- What is it going to be like to be resurrected?

- What is it going to be like to have a spirit body?
- What is it going to be like to see God the Father and Jesus Christ face to face?

You can see Isa. 6 in Isaiah 53:10: "...He shall see His seed; He shall prolong His days... [through the resurrection] ...and that the purpose [pleasure] of the LORD might prosper in His hand." *We, brethren, are the pleasure of the Lord!* Did you know that? Provided that we do the things that please Him. That's something!

Verse 12: "Therefore, I will divide to Him *a portion* with the great, and He shall divide the spoil with the strong...[with us He's going to share the kingdom] ...**because He has poured out His soul to death; and He was counted among the transgressors; and He bore the sin of many, and made intercession for transgressors.**"

We read in 1-John 2 that He is our Advocate. It's still so hard for us to get in our minds that God is not our enemy. Do you understand what I mean? In the world the people view God as an enemy. When we sin, yes, we make ourselves the enemy of God, but through the grace of God we have forgiveness. We have a Savior Who is not up there like some persnickety, intolerant person looking for every little sin—to reach down like you find an ant crawling on your counter in the kitchen, you reach down and smash it, and that's the end of that ant.

Many times we think of God treating us in that way. Every time we do something that's not right—smash! We, also, in living under a ministry that always did that, when they found out that you did something wrong, they would come in and—smash, and you felt like a squashed ant. We transfer that kind of thinking to God. *No!* Christ is an Advocate; Christ intercedes. When you sin, Christ is waiting for you to repent. He does not want you to bear that because He's already borne it for you. That's what it says.

Hebrews 2:14: "Therefore, since the children are partakers of flesh and blood, in like manner He also took part in the same, in order that through death He might annul him who has the power of death—that is, the devil; and **that He might deliver those who were subject to bondage all through their lives by their fear of death**" (vs 14-15).

When you are in fear, fear of men, fear of sin, fear of death... You can see this in some of the funerals that take place where people really get fanatical over the death of someone. They are just in hysterics and they can hardly stand it—that's all fear. Remember, **perfect love is casting out fear!** Christ loved us and did this for us, to cast out fear.

Verse 16: "For surely, He is not taking upon Himself to help *the* angels; but He is taking upon Himself to help *the* seed of Abraham. For this reason, **it was obligatory for Him to be made like His brethren in everything...** [Why?] **...that He might be a merciful and faithful High Priest in things pertaining to God, in order to make propitiation for the sins of the people**" (vs 16-17). What kind of reconciliation? *The most profound kind!*

Have you ever had this experience? You're talking with someone and they're explaining about a problem and they're kind of afraid to really let you know too much. They're kind of nibbling around the edges. You finally say, 'I've gone through that same thing.' It just kind of breaks the barriers down and helps the person to go through it and unload it. Christ went through the same thing. So that:

- there is no sin that we cannot confess to God
- there is no temptation that He does not understand
- there is no pull of the flesh that He had not experienced

"...that He might be a merciful and faithful High Priest *in* things pertaining to God, in order to make propitiation for the sins of the people. For because **He Himself has suffered, having been tempted in like manner, He is able to help...** [comfort/succor] **...those who are being tempted** (v 17-18).

Hebrews 4:14: "**Having, therefore, a great High Priest...**" No man on earth could *ever, ever* be a middle man. Christ is the Mediator. He is the *middle man* between God the Father and us. No other man.

"...*Who* has passed into the heavens..." (v 14). Far above any man. Far above any corrupting influence.

"...Jesus the Son of God, we should hold fast the confession *of our faith*. **For we do not have a high priest who cannot empathize with our weaknesses...** [the feelings] **...but One Who was tempted in all things according to the likeness of our own temptations; yet, He was without sin.** Therefore, we should come with boldness to the throne of grace..." (vs 14-16).

All the prophecies concerning the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, being our Passover and being God come in the flesh to die for us, that we can come to the throne of grace:

"...so that we may receive mercy and find grace to help in time of need" (v 16)—*which then is anytime! All the time!*

The more that you rely on Christ in this way, the more that you are going to understand the love, mercy and grace of God, the more that you are going to understand why we need to keep the commandments of God by loving Him and how much Christ has loved you. He's loved us with the same love that the Father had loved Him. ***There can be no greater love that He can bring than the reconciliation of many and bring us back to God the Father!*** Though these Words are spoken in other Churches, they really do not comprehend it.

FRC:nfs  
Transcribed 02-10-15  
Proofed: bo—2-16-15

All Scripture from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter.

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) Isaiah 52:13-15
- 2) Isaiah 53:1-3, 1
- 3) Isaiah 40:10
- 4) Isaiah 51:5, 9
- 5) Isaiah 53:2-3
- 6) John 1:1, 10-13
- 7) John 2:23-25
- 8) Isaiah 53:3-6, 4-5
- 9) 1-Peter 2:21-24
- 10) Isaiah 53:5
- 11) Genesis 3:15
- 12) Isaiah 53:5-11
- 13) Hebrews 10:4-7, 9-10, 9
- 14) 1-John 1:7-9
- 15) 1-John 1:9-10
- 16) 1-John 2:1-2
- 17) Isaiah 53:11
- 18) Romans 3:20-22, 31
- 19) Romans 6:1-4
- 20) Isaiah 53:10, 12
- 21) Hebrews 2:14-18
- 22) Hebrews 4:14-16

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Psalms 23
- Revelation 18
- Isaiah 6

#### Also referenced:

##### Books:

- *Messianic Christology* by Arnold Fruchtenbaum
- *The Two Babylons* by Alexander Hislop
- *The Christian Passover* by Fred R. Coulter

##### Sermon:

- *Covenant Sacrifice Between God the Father and Jesus Christ*

##### Sermon Series:

- *The Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament* by Arnold Fruchtenbaum
- *Epistle of Romans*

## Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VII First and Second Coming of Christ

(Zechariah 11)  
Fred R. Coulter

We certainly have really learned a lot going through this series. Many of them we already knew but we didn't put them all together in one series. I'll mention once again that I'm following along with Arnold Fruchtenbaum's book *Messianic Christology*, which is very good. When he's very good, he's very good and when he's bad, he's very bad. In these cases, he's very good.

In Isa. 61, there is the combination of the first coming and second coming. Some of the Scriptures we'll cover have to do with the first and second coming. Sometimes they blend together so closely that it's awfully hard to separate them. In this case, this is it.

Isaiah 61:1: "The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon Me because the LORD has anointed Me to preach the Gospel to the poor; He has sent Me to bind up the broken hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to those who are bound; to preach the acceptable year of the LORD..." (vs 1-2). That ends the part for His first coming. The next part is His second coming.

"...and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all who mourn; to appoint to those who mourn in Zion, giving to them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the mantle of praise for the spirit of heaviness; so that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that He might be glorified" (vs 2-3).

When we come to the first coming, there are a couple of important things we need to understand. Let's go to Luke 4 and we will see that these are the things that Christ said pertain to Him. Let's understand that this probably occurred on the Feast of Pentecost because the Greek here for this is: 'and on the day of the weeks' when it says, 'as His custom was He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath.'

I think it's quite interesting that this major part of His proclamation, which was not really the beginning of His preaching, was the beginning of His preaching in Nazareth "...where He had been brought up..." He began preaching right after He succeeded in going through the temptation with Satan the devil and He began preaching in all the area round about.

Luke 4:16: "And He came to Nazareth, **where He had been brought up**; and according to His custom, He went into the synagogue on the Sabbath Day and stood up to read." This is the one,

'the day of the weeks' or 'the day of the Sabbaths.' It could be translated either way.

Verse 17: "And there was given Him *the* book of the prophet Isaiah; and when He had unrolled the scroll, He found the place where it was written... [this follows right along with Isa. 61]: ...'*The Spirit of the Lord is upon Me*; for this reason, He has anointed Me to preach the Gospel to *the poor*'..." (vs 17-18). It's showing right here that:

- it is the work of God's Spirit
- it is the preaching of the Gospel to the poor

"...He has sent Me to heal those who are brokenhearted..." (v 18). The fact of the matter is, Christ is the only One Who can truly heal a broken heart. There are a lot of people:

- who have been dispirited
- who have broken hearts
- whose lives have been shattered

Christ is the only One Who can heal them.

"to proclaim pardon to *the* captives..." (v 18). In the first coming, this has to do with those who are taken captive by Satan the devil.

"...and recovery of sight to *the* blind... [which He did, He healed the blind] ...to send forth in deliverance those who have been crushed, to proclaim *the* acceptable year of *the* Lord.... [He stopped right in middle of the sentence] ...And after rolling up the scroll *and* delivering it to the attendant, He sat down; and the eyes of everyone in the synagogue were fixed on Him. Then He began to say to them, 'Today, this Scripture is being fulfilled in your ears'" (vs 18-21). That was the beginning of it.

James 4:7: "Therefore, submit yourselves to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw near to God, and He will draw near to you. Cleanse *your* hands, you sinners, and purify *your* hearts, you double-minded!" (vs 7-8). That shows the activity of Satan the devil.

I think we will find that 2-Tim. 2 is very interesting, especially in the light of things that are happening in the Church of God. Some very strange things are happening and I don't think it's over with, yet. I think what it's going to be, a lot of it is the hand of correction from God. This is very important and instructive for us because we have to put the Scriptures together rightly.

2-Timothy 2:15: “Diligently *study* to show yourself approved unto God, a workman who does not *need to be* ashamed, **rightly dividing the Word of the Truth**.” That is the biggest lack that I see today in so many people. Especially, for those men who are ‘want-to-bes’. A ‘want-to-be’ is someone who wants to be a minister and shouldn’t be. A ‘want-to-be’ thinks that he really has *it* and he really knows the Word of God. Paul was dealing with some ‘want-to-bes’ here.

Verse 16: “But avoid profane and vain babblings... [that ought to take care of the speaking in tongues thing] ...because they will *only* give rise to more ungodliness.” That’s what we’re seeing happen, more and more ungodliness increasing everywhere.

Verse 17: “And their words will eat away at the body like gangrene...” It just eats away. ‘A little leaven leavens the whole lump.’ That’s exactly what has happened.

“...of whom are Hymeneus and Philetus, who have gone astray from the Truth, claiming that the resurrection has already taken place, and are destroying the faith of some” (vs 17-18). This happens with so many different doctrines with people who don’t get in and prove, know and understand.

I was talking to someone and he said that we all need to learn how to stand on our own two feet. The problem is that you have to make sure that you have your feet in the right place and that you don’t have a twisting of Scriptures, which is something that is your own fancy. I have papers and e-mails pass by me, and *people believe some of the strangest things in the Church of God!* Then, they come back as if it’s some sort of inspired thing.

I imagine that Hymeneus and Philetus thought that this was really very inspired, Christ hadn’t returned, obviously the resurrection is passed, only His, the rest of us go to heaven. Everybody clapped their hands, stamped their feet and said, ‘Amen! Hallelujah!’

Verse 19: “Nevertheless, the foundation of God stands firm, having this seal: **‘The Lord knows those who are His’**...” That’s quite a thing! Maybe that’s what’s happening with all that’s going on. We’re dealing with a lot of Laodiceans:

- who think they know, *and don’t know*
- who say they see, *and can’t see*
- who say they have covering, *but are running around naked*

“...and, ‘Let everyone who calls upon the name of Christ depart from unrighteousness.’.... [lawlessness or anything against the Word of God] ...But in a

great house there are not only vessels of gold and silver, but also of wood and clay; and some *are* for honor; and some *are* for dishonor. Therefore, if anyone has purged himself from these, he will be a vessel for honor, having been sanctified...” (vs 19-21). What he’s says is that Hymeneus and Philetus were vessels unto dishonor because they had false doctrine. We’ll see what happens to them.

“...and *made* serviceable to the Master, *and* having been prepared for every good work (v 21). He’s instructing Timothy as to what he needed to do with his ministry so that things could be handled properly.

Verse 22: “But flee youthful lusts; and pursue righteousness, faith, love *and* peace with those who are calling on the Lord out of a pure heart.” When you have that, you also have that there are some who are calling upon the Lord without a pure heart:

- they’re calling upon the Lord to get *their* will *instead of the will of God*
- they’re calling upon the Lord to benefit them in their own circumstances *rather than seeking God for the sake of God*

There’s a vast difference in that. It’s a difference between gimmee, *gimnee*, ***gimmee*** and conversion.

Verse 23: “But foolish and ignorant speculations reject, knowing that they engender arguments.” I have been through that from A to Z, from so many doctrines top to bottom, that it’s incredible.

It’s like one man said, ‘Let’s see God’s view of it.’ He puts out a little letter with three little Scriptures that don’t apply and he says that that’s God’s view. What happens here is that when people have foolish and unlearned questions, they’re taking a position. Whenever you have a position, that is self-will. I was accused of being prejudice concerning something. I said, ‘I am not prejudice concerning that, I am prejudice for the Truth of God. That’s what we all have to be to seek the Truth of God.

Verse 24: “Now, it is obligatory *that* a servant of *the* Lord not be argumentative, but gentle toward all, competent to teach, forbearing, in meekness correcting those who set themselves in opposition...” (vs 24-25). They have to have an answer because they are opposing themselves. Once the answer is given, if they continue to oppose themselves, then watch what happens.

“...if perhaps God may grant them repentance unto acknowledging of *the* Truth, and *that* they may wake up *and escape* from the devil’s snare, who have been taken captive by him to *do* his

will” (vs 25-26). This tells us that all these foolish questions and things within the Church are generated because people are seeking not God’s will but *their will*. Satan is right there baiting them right on, taking them captive.

It is a shame for people to be released from that kind of captivity and then come into the Church of God—because Christ has come to take them out of captivity and their prison in this age; the prison of being bound by Satan the devil—**and then they go back!** Like Peter said, ‘the dog returns to its vomit.’

I’ve seen it over and over and **over** again. When these questions are answered, when the things are properly given to them in Truth, what happens? ‘*A little leaven leavens the whole lump!*’ The next thing you know, Satan has inspired another *very interesting doctrine* and come up with all these weird things.

- **if** you’ve been delivered out of the prison
- **if** you have been delivered from these things
- **if** you’ve been healed of a broken heart
- **if** you are living in the liberty of the grace of God
- **if** you are living in the liberty that is setting you free from Satan the devil

then you have the ‘acceptable year of salvation’ proclaimed to you and you need to take advantage of it, and not go back to the way that it was.

If you have some old *Envoys* (Ambassador College year books), go back and look through those: Where has everybody gone? Go back and look through some of the old Church rosters: Where has everybody gone? You talk to some of them and they don’t even understand the Bible anymore; it’s really amazing. *Christ has delivered them from it, but they want to go back and re-enter all of that!*

We’ve covered the first coming. Now, let’s look at some things concerning the second coming. Let’s see what Jesus said concerning His coming again.

John 14:1: “Let not your heart be troubled...” —especially today. *Don’t let your heart be troubled* though it appears that there may be a time sequence in Christ’s return different than we expect.

It makes me wonder about what is this light they saw way, way out there. They can’t identify it as a star because they can run a light spectrum on the light and they can tell virtually what it is; but this light spectrum is so different they cannot identify what it is. *It makes you wonder!*

Speculation: Years ago I said that when it talks about ‘the sign of the Son of Man shall appear,’ it would be a light which comes closer and closer and

closer to the earth. I don’t know, so this is not doctrine, but a thought. Is this new light a warning from God concerning the return of Christ, whenever? That could be out there a long, long time and people get used to it. Then, all of a sudden it starts moving closer and closer to the earth and since they can’t identify it, they will believe it is an invasion from other space. ‘*Don’t let your heart be troubled*’ with all these things that take place.

“...You believe in God; believe also in Me. In My Father’s house are many dwelling places; if it were otherwise, I would have told you. I am going to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, **I will come again and receive you to Myself; so that where I am, you may be also**” (vs 1-3). Christ is coming to the earth. We have all the Scriptures concerning it. He’s going to come as a ‘thief in the night.’ It tells us in several places.

There is the parable of, ‘You know not when your master<sup>[transcriber’s correction]</sup> is going to come,’ (Matt. 24). Matt. 24-25 all have to do with people’s attitude concerning what’s going to happen at the return of Christ.

Matthew 24:42: “Watch, therefore, because you do not know in what hour your Lord is coming.” It’s a continuous watch.

Luke 21:34: “Watch yourselves, lest your hearts be preoccupied with high living and drinking and the cares of *this* life, and **that day come upon you suddenly**.” It’s going to come. What are the biggest problems that we have today?

- high living
- drunkenness, not only with booze but with drugs
- spiritual drunkenness, drinking of the wine of the wrath of the golden cup of Babylon
- cares of this life that people are so wrapped up in the cares of this life and this world, that they’re just forgetting God all the way around

So, “...**that day come upon you suddenly**.”

This happened to a woman whose daughter now has been ‘marinated’ by this world’s education. Granted she got a college degree so she can teach, but what is she going to teach? *She’s going to teach stinkin’ thinkin’*. She was talking about that you have to be careful about what you do and how you’re doing it, because Christ will return. ‘Oh, you don’t believe that, do you?’ This was said by someone raised in the Church. You see what happens? “...the cares of *this* life...”

Verse 35: “For as a snare it shall come upon all those who dwell on the face of the earth. Watch,

therefore, *and* pray at all times that you may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man” (vs 35-36).

When we start talking about the second coming and Christ returning, let’s see some of the things that are going to happen at that particular time. It’s going to be something. We’ve covered that on the Day of Trumpets, Atonement and also for the Feast of Tabernacles and what God’s plan is concerning that.

Isaiah 61:2: “...and the day of vengeance of our God...” The day of the vengeance of God is the seven last plagues (Rev. 16).

“...to comfort all who mourn... [beginning of the millennium] ...to appoint to those who mourn in Zion, giving to them beauty for ashes... [talking about the Jews directly] ...the oil of joy for mourning, the mantle of praise for the spirit of heaviness; so that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that He might be glorified” (vs 2-3).

Mark 11 is talking directly of the Jews and Israel but more particularly the Jews. The Jews, or Judaism was likened unto the fig tree that was cursed. That’s why Christ cursed it.

Mark 11:12<sup>[transcriber’s correction]</sup>: “And in the morning, after they left Bethany, He became hungry. Then, seeing a fig tree afar off that had leaves, He went *to it to see* if He might possibly find something on it. But after coming to it, He found nothing except leaves because it was not yet *the* season for figs” (vs 12-13).

I had one person say that it wasn’t fair for Christ to curse the fig tree, because it didn’t have figs because it wasn’t time. That’s not the lesson. The lesson is this:

Verse 14: “And Jesus responded *by* saying to it, ‘Let no one eat fruit from you any more forever!’ And His disciples heard *it*.” In cursing this fig tree, what He was doing was cursing Judaism because they did not bring forth the fruit that should have been when He came to this earth.

This follows right along the same line here: v 15: “Then they came into Jerusalem; and after entering the temple, Jesus began to cast out those who were buying and selling in the temple; and He overthrew the tables of the money exchangers and the seats of those who were selling doves. Moreover, He did not allow anyone to carry a vessel through the temple. And He taught, saying to them, ‘Is it not written, “My house shall be called a house of prayer for all nations”? But you have made it a den of robbers’” (vs 15-17). They weren’t producing the things they should have.

Verse 18: “Now, the chief priests and the scribes heard *this*, and they sought how they might destroy Him; for they feared Him, because all the multitudes marveled at His teaching. And when evening came, He went out of the city. And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from *the* roots. Then Peter remembered *and* said to Him, ‘Look, Master! The fig tree that You cursed has dried up.’ And Jesus answered and said to them, ‘Have faith *from* God’” (vs 18-22)—have *God’s* faith.

In other words: ***Judaism didn’t have faith and they rejected Christ.*** So, if you don’t want to suffer the same fate as the shriveled up fig tree, then you have to ***have the faith of Christ.***

Verse 23: “For truly I say to you, whoever shall say to this mountain, ‘Be taken away and be cast into the sea,’ **and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe** that what he said will take place, he shall have whatever he shall say. For this reason I say to you, all *the* things that you ask *when* you are praying, **believe** that you will receive *them*, and *they* shall be *given* to you” (vs 23-24). Then He talks about when you pray you are to forgive, and so forth. This is something that people really need to understand.

The point of it here is that when Christ returns those of Judah are going to be called ‘trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that He might be glorified’ (Isa. 61). It’s going to be a totally different thing. Just like Paul said. He said that if their ‘cutting off’ has been the salvation of the world, what do you think their reinstatement is going to be? ***Absolute glory!*** When the Millennium starts and that takes place, it’s going to really be something. We have combined with Isa. 61 ***the first and second coming!*** He’s going to:

- preach the Gospel
- proclaim liberty to the captives
- open the prisons of them that are bound
- proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord

In His first coming He is going to do one other thing that is very important. This ought to be a lesson for every single one of us.

Matt. 16 is the one that the Catholics go to, to try and prove that the pope is the successor of Peter. It has nothing to do with that whatsoever.

Matthew 16:13: “Now, after coming into the parts of Caesarea Philippi, Jesus questioned His disciples, saying, ‘Whom do men declare Me, the Son of man, to be?’ And they said, ‘Some *say* John the Baptist; and others Elijah; and others Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.’ He said to them, ‘But you, whom do you declare Me to be?’ Then Simon Peter answered *and* said, ‘You are the Christ, the Son of

the living God.’ And Jesus answered *and* said to him, ‘Blessed are you, Simon Bar-Jona, for **flesh and blood did not reveal it to you, but My Father, Who is in heaven**’ (vs 13-17)—which also tells us another lesson, too: If you really understand that Christ is the Messiah, *God the Father has to reveal that to you*, that He is *truly* the Christ.

Verse 18: “And I say also to you, that you are Peter... [‘Petros’ or Cephas: *a little stone*] ...but upon this Rock... [‘Petra’: *the huge cliff*] ...**I will build My Church**...” *That’s why Christ came the first time, to build His Church.* All those other things, but to build the Church.

“...and the gates of the grave shall not prevail against it” (v 18). *He came to build His Church.*

Let’s understand something concerning *church*. Any organization of the activities that are done for the Church are *to serve the people*. The people are not to serve the organization. If you understand that then I think you grasp what kind of organization that there needs to be; a proper organization so that things are done in order, that they are done rightly. It is not that everybody serves the organization and now we have a political power structure that people can climb in the form of a hierarchy. I think that is a lesson we have learned.

Matthew 28:18: “And Jesus came *and* spoke to them, saying, ‘**All authority**’...” The Greek there is: ‘exousia’; He also has *all power*, all ‘*dunamais*.’

“...in heaven and on earth has been given to Me. Therefore, go *and* make disciples in all nations...” (vs 18-19). There has to be the teacher. That’s why there has to be the Church built.

“...baptizing them into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit; **Teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you. And lo, I am with you always, even until the completion of the age.** Amen (vs 19-20). He had to build the Church so that there would be those who would go out and teach. Paul said, ‘How shall they learn unless they have a teacher, and how shall they have a teacher unless he be sent.’ So, there have to be teachers.

Today, it’s almost like everyone’s trying to have a church of one. We’ll set up a website and we’ll have a church of one. I wish you lots of luck. Unless you’re doing the will of God, you’re going to be in bad shape.

This is Christ the Messiah as King. Also, this has to be God, Who became a man, Jeremiah 23:5: “‘Behold, the days come,’ says the LORD, ‘that I will raise to David a righteous Branch’...” We saw in Isa. 11 that Branch is going to grow out of the stub of Jessie.

“...and a King... [ties in with Isa. 9] ...shall reign and prosper, and shall do justice and righteousness in the earth. In His days Judah shall be saved...” (vs 5-6). This is also having to do with the combining of the first and second coming.

“...and Israel shall dwell safely. And this is His name by which He shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS” (v 6). That is only a name that’s given to God. He’s going to be raised up into David, out of his seed. Matthew also understood this in writing it:

Matthew 1:1: “*The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.*” —knowing that it had to go right back to David and to Abraham. You can’t have David without Abraham because Abraham came first. He literally fulfilled what it’s talking about here in Jer. 23:5 and He said that at His trial. Pilate said, ‘Are you and king?’ He said, ‘To this end was I born and this is the reason that I came into the world.’

We have something very different as we go on, Jeremiah 23:7: “‘Therefore, behold, the days come,’ says the LORD, “that they shall no more say, “The LORD lives, Who brought the children of Israel up out of the land of Egypt”; but, “The LORD lives, Who brought up and led the seed of the house of Israel out of the north country, and from all countries where *He* had driven them. And they shall dwell in their own land”” (vs 7-8).

Then it goes right into the Millennium, the whole meaning of that and how when Christ returns and comes as King that He is going to set all of that up. The thing that is important for us is that we’re going to have a part in it.

This talks about Bethlehem where Christ would be born, Micah 5:2: “And you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, you being least among the thousands of Judah, **out of you He shall come forth to Me, that is to become Ruler in Israel. He Whose goings forth have been from of old, from the days of eternity.**”

This is quite a profound thing that we are talking about here. Jesus came from a very humble human source. Joseph and Mary were not rich. They didn’t have many houses that they traveled to, as some evangelists have said. Also, it was in a small, little village: Bethlehem. Of course, that’s where Jessie lived, that’s where David lived and that was where Christ was born. Though it be “...least among the thousands of Judah”... yet, the *Ruler* is going to come from you. Again, we have the whole principle of how God does things:

- He takes the least and does the most
- He take the rejected and makes them accepted

—like in preaching the Gospel, to heal the broken heart and all this sort of thing. This is what it's talking about. It's also showing that He was from everlasting. That is, from eternity—showing that He was God Who became man (Isa. 7:14; 9:6).

All of these prophecies show that God is going to become a man and come to this earth. So, He would be born in Bethlehem and that's where He was born. We're going to see some interesting things in Zech. Zech. 11 has been really an enigma to understand.

Zechariah 9:9: "Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem; **behold, your King comes to you.**" Of course, they didn't understand it. Some did; we will see there has always been a remnant in Israel that were believers.

"...He is triumphant and victorious, *yet* meek and **riding on a donkey, even on a colt, the foal of a donkey**" (v 9). That's quite a thing!

- He didn't come in a chariot
- He didn't come in with a great entourage of soldiers
- He didn't come in with all the political people giving accolades to Him

As a matter of fact, they were all trying to kill Him.

Let's see how this all comes together; let's come back and see the prophecies of this. A lot of the prophecies that we find the fulfillment of in the New Testament, are found in the book of Matthew.

Matthew 21:1: "Now, as they were approaching Jerusalem, they came to Bethphage, near the Mount of Olives; and Jesus sent two disciples, saying to them, 'Go into the village, the one ahead of you, and immediately you shall find a donkey tied, and a colt with her. Loose *them* and bring *them* to Me.... [actually, it was the colt that they brought] ...And if anyone says anything to you, tell *him*, 'The Lord has need of them.' And he will send them at once'" (vs 1-3).

Jesus knew that this was going to take place. Absolutely knew it. I don't know what kind of vision He may have had to see or know that the colt was there, but He knew it would be there on that day at that time.

Verse 4: "But this all took place so that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, 'Say to the daughter of Sion, "**Behold, your King comes to you, meek and mounted on a donkey, and on a colt the foal of a donkey.**"' And the disciples left, and did as Jesus had ordered them; they brought the donkey and the colt, and put their garments upon them; and He sat on them. And a great number *of the* multitude spread their garments on the road; and others were cutting down branches

from the trees and spreading *them* on the road. And the multitudes, those who were going before and those who were following behind, were shouting, saying, 'Hosanna to the Son of David!.... [This ties in with Jer. 23 that He is going to be the son of David] ...Blessed is He Who comes in *the* name of *the* Lord. Hosanna in the highest!!'" (vs 4-9).

After Jesus got done correcting and excoriating the religious leaders of all their sins there in Jer. 23, notice what He says here:

Matthew 23:37: "Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *you* who kill the prophets and stone those who have been sent to you, how often would I have gathered your children together, even as a hen gathers her brood under *her* wings, but you refused! Behold, your house is left to you desolate. For I say to you, you shall not see Me at all from this time forward, until you shall say, 'Blessed is He Who comes in *the* name of *the* Lord'" (vs 37-39).

That's what they were saying in Matthew 21:9: "...Blessed is He Who comes in *the* name of *the* Lord...." These were the 'believing' disciples that believed in Him. The 'rejecting' ones are going to have to say that at Christ's return.

Verse 10: "Now, when He entered Jerusalem, the entire city was moved, saying, 'Who is this?' And the multitudes said, 'This is Jesus the prophet, the One Who *is* from Nazareth of Galilee'" (vs 10-11). Then it carries on with the cursing of the fig tree, again. That's how He came:

- He came as a King
- He came lowly

*Next time He's going to come with power!*

Zechariah 9:10: "And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem. And the battle bow shall be cut off, and He shall speak peace to the nations; and His dominion shall be from sea to sea, and from the River to the ends of the earth."

This is showing what He's going to do when He comes back and rule as King. Even though He comes the first time, lowly, 'sitting on the colt of a donkey,' how is He going to come the second time? *With power and all might! The whole world is going to see Him!* That's going to be quite a thing.

(go to the next track)

We're going to go through the entirety of Zech. 11. There are quite a few things in here that are very important for us to understand concerning the prophecies of Jesus. Let's see if we can understand it. I think that Arnold Fruchtenbaum has a better understanding than anything I have ever heard or read concerning Zech. 11. I know there has been a lot of speculation that some of these things

when you read of the ‘foolish prophet’ that it might apply to this person, that person or the other person, but I think that he has it absolutely right.

Zechariah 11:1: “Open your doors, O Lebanon, so that the fire may devour your cedars. Howl, fir tree; for the cedar has fallen; because the majestic *trees* are devastated. Howl, O oaks of Bashan; for the thick forest has come down. There *is* the sound of the howling of the shepherds; for their glory is destroyed. There *is* the sound of the roaring of young lions; for the pride of Jordan is destroyed” (vs 1-3).

from *Messianic Christology* by Arnold Fruchtenbaum:

pg. 68—The kind of devastation described in verses 1 and 3 could only happen in 70<sub>A.D.</sub> the result of the first Jewish uprising against Rome.

There were actually two of them.

The prophecies of the first three verses could be said to be fully completed by the year 135<sub>A.D.</sub>.

We have a 65-year period in which this was carried out—the destruction of Jerusalem, the destruction of the temple—and then we have 135<sub>A.D.</sub> when they have the revolt by Rabbi Akiva and the Bar Kokhba. It was called the Bar Kokhba Revolution.

It talks about the cedars. Where did the wood come from for the temple? *It came from the cedars of Lebanon! They are burned!* Was the temple burned? *Yes, it was!* So, this is also talking about the destruction of the temple. Then the “...howling of the shepherds...”; they were the leaders of the Jews who were scattered. They had:

- no more country
- no more city
- no more priesthood
- no more homes

They were scattered out into all the world. This really shows the final destruction of it.

Verse 4: “For thus says the LORD my God, ‘Feed the flock of the slaughter. Those buying them slaughter them, and hold themselves not guilty. And those who sell them say, “Blessed *be* the LORD, for I am rich”; and their shepherds do not pity them, for I will no more pity the people of the land,’ says the LORD; ‘but lo, I will deliver the men, each one into his neighbor’s hand and into his king’s hand. And they shall strike the land, and I will not deliver them out of their hand’” (vs 4-6).

#### Analysis of these verses:

This refers to the part of His first coming. The Messiah is referred to as the One Who is feeding the flock:

**Verse 4: “...Feed the flock of the slaughter...”** They were destined to be slaughtered and He fed them. He witnessed to them.

The sheep which are being destroyed by those “...**buying them...**” are their possessors. Who possessed the Jews at that time? *They were in slavery to the Romans!*

**Verse 5: “Those buying them slaughter them...”** As we’ll see, they killed 1,100,000 and took 97,000 Jews off into captivity.

**“...and hold themselves not guilty...”** They had absolutely no remorse over it because it was such a terrible, terrible rebellion. They had absolutely no remorse for doing it and they had the ‘scorched earth’ policy.

**“...And those that sell them say, ‘Blessed *be* the LORD, for I am rich...’”** They were doing it in the name of God.

**“...and their shepherds do not pity them...”**—which means that the Jewish leaders didn’t have any pity on them. The flock of the people of Israel, the Jews, have been abandoned by man.

**Verse 6: ““For I will no more pity the people of the land,’ says the LORD...”** Mercy and protection was taken from them.

It talks about a ‘king’ here: **“...but lo, I will deliver the men, each one into his neighbor’s hand and into his king’s hand.”**

Since they rejected Christ as the King, who was their king? Remember what the Jews said, when Pilate said, ‘Behold your King.’ They said, ‘We have no king but Caesar.’ *Caesar they proclaimed as their king!*

**“...And they shall strike the land, and I will not deliver them out of their hand.”** It’s really quite a prophecy of what would happen because they rejected Christ.

There are some good lessons for us here. There are too many people today who are rejecting God, rejecting Christ, who should know better. *It’s amazing what’s happening!*

Verse 7: “And I fed the flock of slaughter, even the most miserable of the flock. And I took two staffs for myself; the one I called Grace [Beauty], and the other I called Union [Bands]. And I fed the flock.” What does this mean?:

**“...the flock of slaughter...”** are the Jews.

**“...even the most miserable of the flock...”** There was a *remnant* that believed and the poor flock were fed.; that’s referring to the remnant of Israel.

**“...And I took two staffs for myself, the one I called Grace [Beauty] and the other I called**

**Union [Bands]....”** We have two things going with this: *Grace* is Christ; *Union* is the Jews as a nation, they were together.

**“...And I fed the flock.”** There was that time period when they were preaching the Gospel. He fed the flock. Remember how the book of Acts starts out with how many were converted. Those were the ones that were saved.

*Grace* can mean those who are saved. The staff of *Union* was for the protection of the flock. The staff called *Union* was to keep the flock together and preserve it's unity; but He's going to break that.

Verse 8: “I also cut off **three shepherds in one month**; and my soul loathed them, and their soul also abhorred me.” What do these three shepherds represent? I've wondered that through the years. I think that Arnold Fruchtenbaum has the right answer.

The three shepherds, he says, ‘are symbolic’ of the Pharisees, Sadducees, and scribes who are shepherding the people. They were cut off in the destruction of Jerusalem. The reason why they were cut off? “...my soul loathed them, and their soul also abhorred me.”

- What do you have? *You have the whole plan and scheme of getting rid of Christ!*
  - ✓ rejecting Him as the Messiah
  - ✓ not accepting Him
- How did they abhor Him? *They rejected Him!*

Matthew 12 is the fulfillment of this. This is what you would say constituted the ‘unpardonable sin’ that doomed Jerusalem for destruction here in Matt. 12. They rejected Him and committed the unpardonable sin by rejecting the Word of God. The destruction of Jerusalem from that time, there was no turning that back, because they rejected Christ.

Matthew 12:22: “Then was brought to Him one who was possessed by a demon, blind and dumb; and He healed him, so that the one *who had been* blind and dumb both spoke and saw. And the multitudes were all amazed, and said, ‘Is this the Son of David?’” (vs 22-23). *They knew!* The people knew! They understood it was to be the Messiah. They understood it was to be Him.

Verse 24: “But when the Pharisees heard *this*, they said, ‘This *Man* does not cast out demons except by Beelzebub, prince of the demons.’... [they’re rejecting God right there] ...But Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said to them, ‘Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation, and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand. And if Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself. How then shall his

kingdom stand?’” (vs 24-26). It’s not going to stand because he is divided against himself.

Verse 27: “And if I by Beelzebub cast out demons, by whom do your sons cast *them* out? On account of this, they shall be your judges. But if I by *the* Spirit of God cast out demons, **then the Kingdom of God has come upon you**. Or how is anyone able to enter into the house of a strong *man* and plunder his goods, if he does not first bind the strong man? And then he will plunder his house. The one who is not with Me is against Me, and the one who does not gather with Me scatters. Because of this, I say to you, **every sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven to men except the blasphemy against the Holy Spirit; that shall not be forgiven to men.**” (vs 27-31). They were blaspheming the Holy Spirit of God, because God the Father by the power of the Holy Spirit was doing these healings.

Verse 32: “**And whoever speaks a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this age nor in the coming age.**” These are really strong words. They rejected Him and He rejected them. They abhorred Him and He loathed them *for their behavior*. All of Matt. 23 tells how He really condemned the scribes and Pharisees as hypocrites and blind.

Verse 33: “Either make the tree good and the fruit good, or make the tree corrupt and its fruit corrupt; **for a tree is known by its fruit.**” That’s just the way it is. The tree will produce the fruit it was designed to produce.

Verse 34: “Offspring of vipers, how are you able to speak good things, being evil? **For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks.**”

Verse 36: ““But I say to you, for every idle word that men may speak, they shall be held accountable in *the* day of judgment. For by your words you shall be justified, and by your words you shall be condemned”” (vs 36-37). He was saying that they were condemned by their own words for blaspheming the Holy Spirit of God and they committed the unpardonable sin, which now made the destruction of Jerusalem and Judea *absolutely sure*.

Then they said they wanted a sign from Him. He said that no sign is going to be given but the sign of Jonah.

Verse 40: “For just as Jonah was in the belly of the whale three days and three nights, in like manner the Son of man shall be in the heart of the earth three days and three nights.”

Read all of the accounts of Matt. 1-10, then when you come to chapter 12 you have this great

confrontation. In chapter 13 He begins teaching in parables. In Matt. 12 He let it be known that He was the Son of man, that He was the One Who was sent of God. In Matt. 13 He begins teaching in a different manner. He begins speaking in parables. He didn't speak in parables in Matt. 5, 6, 7. He spoke it very clearly.

The reason was that the Jewish people rejected Christ and was committing the unpardonable sin. So, Jesus stops feeding the flock as a whole and deals only with individuals within the nation. With the cessation of feeding He takes a staff named *Grace* and breaks it (Zech. 11:8-10) This symbolizes God's removal of Israel's protection in the inevitability of the 70<sup>A.D.</sup> judgment. Then He gives the New Testament fulfillment here.

Also, if the one that is called *Favor* (KJV) be *Grace*, and it is broken, that can also refer to Christ Who was crucified, because His body was broken open.

What is 'every idle word'? means every word that is not spoken of in a right way concerning Christ and God. That is an 'idle word.' It doesn't mean that you can't have a little humor, joking and jesting as you go along. It doesn't mean that at all. What it really means is they should have had serious words and a serious understanding about Christ.

After all, when you see someone who is deaf and blind healed, to see and to speak, you need to know that that has to be the hand of God by the Spirit of God. Plus, you take all the other miracles that He had up to that point and you add all of those up together, and up to this point He was healing *all* that came to Him. After this point, He healed only those who had personal needs. He didn't heal all of them. It's quite a thing.

I think that Fruchtenbaum did a good job in explaining this. I know that some have looked at Zech. 11, when we get to a later part of it, and they tried to apply that to Herbert W. Armstrong. No, it doesn't apply to him.

Zechariah 11:10: "And I took my staff Grace... [Beauty or Favor] ...and broke it apart, to annul my covenant which I had made with all the people." Did the death of Jesus Christ end the covenant that He had with the people? *Yes!* It applies in both ways. Not only just breaking the covenant, but ***the single thing that broke that covenant***—that made it null and void—***was the sacrifice of Christ!***

Verse 11: "And it was annulled in that day; and so the poor of the flock who were watching me knew that it *was* the Word of the LORD." The very sacrifice of Christ and all the prophecies and taking away protection of the Jews—both of those together—all tie in together. Those who were the 'poor of the flock—that is the righteous remnant

who believed—that waited upon God, "...knew that it *was* the Word of the LORD."

What does it do? *It comes right into the thing concerning the crucifixion, the betrayal of Christ and all of that!*

One final comment from the *Messianic Christology* that Arnold Fruchtenbaum wrote:

During the ministry of Jesus the Jewish believers did indeed understand that judgment was coming and that it was from the hand of the Lord and it was inevitable.

They knew it! It's quite a thing! They really had quite a witness—didn't they? *That's something!* Now we're dealing with the situation that gets into the betrayal and crucifixion of Christ:

Verse 12: "And I said to them, 'If *it is* good, give me my price; and if not, let it go.' So, they weighed my price—thirty *pieces* of silver. And the LORD said to me, 'Throw it to the potter'—the princely price at which I was valued by them. And I took the thirty *pieces* of silver and threw them to the potter in the house of the LORD" (vs 12-13). Zechariah was actually acting this out. He actually did this.

Verse 14: "Then I broke my other staff Union [Bands] apart, that I might break the brotherhood between Judah and Israel." That's how the ten tribes finally got lost. There was no more connection between the Jews and the ten tribes.

"...the thirty *pieces* of silver..." we know that's what Judas received for betraying Christ. What does thirty pieces of silver represent?

Exodus 21:32: "If the ox shall gore a manservant or a maidservant, he shall give to their master thirty shekels of silver, and the ox shall be stoned." In other words, if the ox killed a slave—man or woman—they were paid thirty pieces of silver. That's all they figured Christ was worth.

So, you see how the Word of God all ties together. That's what Judas got. Zechariah portrayed exactly what Judas would go through. Let's see this fulfilled.

Matthew 26:14: "Then one of the twelve, who was called Judas Iscariot, went to the chief priests." Here you had an infiltrator directly from Satan the devil: Judas Iscariot. He was chosen by Christ for this very purpose to fulfill this Scripture. The sermon, *The Enigma of Judas Iscariot*, explains why Judas Iscariot had to die the way that He died.

Verse 15: "And said, 'What are you willing to give me, and I will deliver Him up to you?' And

they **offered him thirty pieces of silver**. And from that time he sought an opportunity to betray Him” (vs 15-16).

Matthew 27:3: “Now, when Judas, who had betrayed Him, saw that He was condemned, he changed his mind... [probably Satan disposed him at that point and he came to himself] ...*and* returned the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and the elders, saying, ‘I have sinned and have betrayed innocent blood.’ But they said, ‘What *is that* to us? You see *to it* yourself.’ And after throwing down the pieces of silver in the temple, he went out and hanged himself. But the chief priests took the pieces of silver *and* said, ‘It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, since it is *the* price of blood.’ And after taking counsel, they bought a potter’s field with the *pieces of silver*, for a burial ground for strangers. Therefore, that field is called The Field of Blood to this day. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, ‘And I took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of Him on Whom a price was set, Whom they of *the* sons of Israel set a price on’” (vs 3-9).

Where did the money come from? They gave Judas thirty pieces of silver. Where did the money come from? Let me read it here in *Messianic Christology*:

Since it was paid to Judas by the chief priests, they would have taken the money from the temple treasury. This money was intended for the specific purpose of purchasing sacrifices. Although they did not realize it, that is exactly what the priests did. They purchased a sacrifice. Jesus was to be the final sacrifice for sin.

God’s Word is so great that down to the smallest little detail—even the intent of the hearts of the people, prophesied about—came to pass. That’s quite a thing.

Zechariah 11:14: “Then I broke my other staff Union [Bands] apart, that I might break the brotherhood between Judah and Israel.”

Again, this was a prophetic act, His breaking it, signifying that the flock would be scattered and the unity of Israel destroyed. During the war against the Romans from 66-70<sub>A.D.</sub> various factions developed among the Zealots and against the Romans from 66-70<sub>A.D.</sub> They began fighting among themselves destroying each other’s food stocks and killing each other.

You can read that in the book of *Josephus* how that they were burning each other’s food stock and they actually got down to eating human flesh.

Ultimately, it was the civil strife within Jerusalem that caused it to fall easily to Rome. The destruction of the unity, therefore, led to the scattering of the flock and a great dispersion of Jewry did indeed begin in 70<sub>A.D.</sub> and continues to this very day.

Verse 15: “And the LORD said to me, ‘Take to yourself yet the instruments of a foolish shepherd, for lo, I will raise up a shepherd in the land who will not care for those who are cut off, nor will he seek the young, nor will he heal that which is broken, nor will he feed that which stands. But he shall eat the flesh of the fat and break their hoofs in pieces. Woe to the worthless shepherd who abandons the flock! The sword *shall be* on his arm and on his right eye; his arm shall be completely dried up, and his right eye shall be utterly darkened’” (vs 15-17).

We’ve wondered about that many times. Some people said when Herbert Armstrong’s eye went blind that that was him. It talked about his ‘strong arm’ and they said that the work was withered up and all of that sort of thing. *That is not true!*

After the three shepherds were cut off—the Pharisees, the Sadducees and the scribes—in 70<sub>A.D.</sub>, what happened with the second Jewish revolution?

In the year 132<sub>A.D.</sub> Simon Bar Kokhba led the second Jewish revolt against Rome. He was supported in this army by many of the rabbis, but most significantly, midway through the revolt, the chief rabbi, Rabbi Akiva, declared Bar Kokhba to be the Messiah.

Fruchtenbaum makes a very good point. He said that every time the Jews name a Messiah it is a *false* Messiah. You know what’s going to happen. They’re going to name another Messiah and he’s going to be a *false Messiah* and they’re going to go through it again.

There is a hill overlooking the temple site, not the Mt. of Olives but another hill. The Jews, for the temple restoration, have been wanting to go up there and sacrifice a Passover lamb. In 1999 they sacrificed a Passover lamb, not in the temple area, but over on a hill overlooking the temple area. They said that this was of great significance to them.

What happened was they did it all according to the way that they would at the temple. They killed the lamb. They built a special oven where they could put it in, put it on the spigot, turn it and roasted it whole. Then they cut off the meat. All those who were there to participate in it took that remnant for part of their Seder meal. They were all excited because now they had a Passover, or a Pasch

sacrifice, as they called it. Things are brewing over there. You know that they are going to go ahead and announce that there is a new Messiah.

At the start of the revolt, the Messianic Jews had taken up swords and joined in what initially was called the defense of the land; but with Rabbi Akiva's declaration, however, the revolt became a Messianic movement and the believing Jews were forced to withdraw from the battle, unable to support Bar Kokhba as Messiah.

That's why they left.

As a result of this, Rabbi Akiva gathered together with the various Jewish councils and passed a long list of laws prohibiting any kind of association with the Jewish believers who were still living in the land.

That's where the beginning of all the anti-Christian things that you now find in the Talmud came from.

Eventually, the Romans returned after their defeat by Bar Kokhba and began to scorch the earth. They had a 'scorch earth' policy throughout the land of Israel. By the time Bar Kokhba made his last stand, in 135<sub>A.D.</sub> virtually the entire land had been burned. Hardly anything was left growing and the people were starving in mass.

That's the destruction described of in Zech. 11:1-3, that He burned it.

It was, therefore, fulfilled to a further degree than in 70<sub>A.D.</sub>.

That's why the climate changed. There was a change in the climate. Whenever you have everything burned off you change the climate. It became rocky and hard, a desert area. I remember reading a botany book which talks about the plants during the days of, not just Jesus, but when they first started conquering the land:

- they had trees
- they had flowers
- they had grass
- they had brooks
- they had plenty of water
- it was a productive land

Not like it is today barren desert and hostile and hardly anything growing. That was really something reading that. I was amazed! They can tell all of that just by digging down into the strata and analyzing what was there.

There's a good lesson for us: ***Do not turn against God!*** When you do, you're going to be in bad shape. Looked what happened here. Why was Akiva called the 'idle shepherd'? *Because they had a false Messiah which was an idol!*

Verse 17: "Woe to the worthless shepherd who abandons the flock! The sword *shall be* on his arm... [he was killed] ...and on his right eye..." He could not *spiritually* see correctly; that's what it's referring to.

"...his arm shall be completely dried up... [which it was; signifying his army, his battles, everything] ...and his right eye shall be utterly darkened" (v 17). That's why he decreed all of these decrees against the Christians. He went into complete darkness. Let's see what it says about darkness of the eye, *when you reject Truth*.

You have a long series of things that led up to this final destruction of the Jews. Not only did they reject Christ when He was here, they didn't repent after the first invasion. They had the second one and that was really quite a thing.

In another sermon I mentioned that Masada took place in 135<sub>A.D.</sub>. No, it didn't; it took place in the first invasion in 70<sub>A.D.</sub>. I'll correct that here.

Matthew 6:22: "The light of the body is the eye. Therefore, if your eye be sound, your whole body shall be *full of light*." That means *single-mindedness*, as it talks about in the Psalms where there's the prophecy of Christ: 'My heart is fixed.' ***Single-mindedness!***

Verse 23: "But if your eye be evil, your whole body shall be *full of darkness*. Therefore, if the light that *is* in you be darkness, **how great is that darkness!**"

To this day, because of that, the darknesses has fallen on so many of the Jews that they won't believe that Jesus was really the true Christ, the true Messiah. They have concocted all kinds of silly and foolish doctrines to deny Christ and to retain their own traditions looking forward to proclaiming yet another Messiah.

They have proclaimed Messiahs all the way down their own history, if you get some of the books that they have. Every one of them turned out to be false. *Every single one!*

I think that's the best understanding of Zechariah that I have ever come across. I think that Fruchtenbaum is exactly right in all of it.

All Scripture from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter.

Scriptural References:

- 1) Isaiah 61:1-3
- 2) Luke 4:16-21
- 3) James 4:7-8
- 4) 2-Timothy 2:15-26
- 5) John 14:1-3
- 6) Matthew 24:42
- 7) Luke 21:34-36
- 8) Isaiah 6:2-3
- 9) Mark 11:12-24
- 10) Matthew 16:13-18
- 11) Matthew 28:18-20
- 12) Jeremiah 23:5-6
- 13) Matthew 1:1
- 14) Jeremiah 23:7-8
- 15) Mica 5:2
- 16) Zechariah 9:9
- 17) Matthew 21:1-9
- 18) Matthew 23:37-39
- 19) Matthew 21:9-11
- 20) Zechariah 9:10
- 21) Zechariah 11:1-8
- 22) Matthew 12:22-34, 36-37, 40
- 23) Zechariah 11:10-14
- 24) Exodus 21:32
- 25) Matthew 26:14-16
- 26) Matthew 27:3-9
- 27) Zechariah 11:14-17
- 28) Zechariah 11:17
- 29) Matthew 6:22-23

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Matthew 25
- Revelation 16
- Isaiah 61; 11; 7:14; 9:6
- Matthew 1-13

Also referenced:

Books:

- *Messianic Christology* by Arnold Fruchtenbaum
- *The Works of Josephus* by Flavius Josephus

Sermon: *The Enigma of Judas Iscariot*

FRC:nfs  
Transcribed: 03-10-15  
Proofed: 3-23-15

## Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament VIII The Prophets & Writings

Fred R Coulter

When we come to understand it, it is very important for us to realize that all through the Old Testament all of these prophecies of Jesus continually point to the fact that God would become a man, going clear back to Gen. 3:15, where it talks about:

- the coming of the Messiah
- the curse upon Satan
  - ✓ that Satan would 'bruise the Messiah's heel'
  - ✓ that the Messiah would 'crush the serpent's head'

Beginning right there at the first, all the way through, all of these prophecies show about the coming of Christ:

- that He would be a man
- that He would die
- that He would live forever

The Old Testament is just filled with it.

Zechariah was a prophet after the time that they came back from the Babylonian captivity. His prophecies are very important concerning the things concerning Christ.

Zechariah 12:10: "And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the people of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplication. And they shall look upon Me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for Him, as one mourns for his only son, and shall be in bitterness over Him, as the bitterness over the firstborn."

### Analysis of verse 10:

Let's look at this prophecy. It's very important to understand it:

**"And I will pour upon the house of David..."** That means the line coming down to Christ, obviously.

**"...and upon the people of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplication..."** This happened once when Christ was here, because all of the early converts were from Judah, or from the area of Galilee, which then were counted as Jews. The second time this is going to happen, I believe, is when 'the Elijah' comes on the scene.

Malachi 4:5: "Behold, I *will* send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful Day of the LORD." When that Elijah is raised up, it will be evident to the Jews.

One thing that's important to understand, only a Jew can preach to a Jew. Therefore, God is going to send Elijah from their own stock. He will probably be just like John the Baptist, a Levite. He's going to be the one who will:

Verse 6: "And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the sons, and the heart of the sons to their fathers..." That means that he's going to turn the Jews back to the 'fathers.' Who are the 'fathers'? *Abraham, Isaac and Jacob!*

He is going to restore and show the Jews that all of the Talmudic writings, the *Code of Jewish Law* by Solomon Ganzfried and Hyman Goldin and all of this, is not of God and they have to repent of it; and they will repent. That's going to be just before Christ's second coming. I believe it's going to be the coming Elijah that's going to do it.

I just might mention that no man that we've ever known in our lifetime was *that Elijah*. Some men we have known were called 'Elijah,' but the one that we knew that supposedly was Elijah died in 1986. That's not just before "...the coming of the great and dreadful Day of the Lord..."—is it? We're years removed from there. It's nowhere near it.

When this happens, the Spirit will be on "...the 'house of David and upon the people of Jerusalem..." *There will be some tremendous things that will happen in Jerusalem!*

Zechariah 12:10: "**And they shall look upon Me whom they have pierced...**" That has to do with Christ. This *piercing* is quite a thing. This *piercing* means to *thrust through*. Let's look where this was fulfilled. There's another piercing that has to do with the hands and feet; that is an entirely different Hebrew word.

John 19:31: "The Jews, therefore, so that the bodies might not remain on the cross on the Sabbath, because it was a preparation *day* (for that Sabbath was a high day)..."

With the *A Harmony of the Gospels*, I make it absolutely clear that in the year that Jesus was crucified the Passover was in the middle of the week. There's only one day on which He could have been crucified. That was on a Wednesday the 14<sup>th</sup>. In the year that He was crucified, the Passover was not on Friday. I also answer the question concerning the 'third day' difficulties that you supposedly find in the book of Luke. The High Day is the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread. This tells us exactly on which day He was crucified.

“...requested of Pilate that their legs might be broken and *the bodies* be taken away. Then the soldiers came and broke the legs of the first *one*, and *the legs* of the other who was crucified with Him. But when they came to Jesus *and* saw that He was already dead, they did not break His legs; but **one of the soldiers had pierced His side...** [past, accomplished fact; that’s why He was dead] **...with a spear, and immediately blood and water had come out**” (vs 31-34).

Who are the ones who saw Jesus? There were the Jews standing around when they saw them, especially the Jews’ religious leaders who had rejected Christ. We also see an end-time fulfillment of this with His second coming.

Revelation 1:5: “And from Jesus Christ, the faithful Witness, **the Firstborn...**” There’s a difference in the Greek. *Only begotten* (KJV) is ‘monogene.’ That’s what Christ was, the *only begotten* of the Father. Where it says ‘first begotten,’ that should be translated *Firstborn*; because the Greek here is:

- ‘proto’—*first*
- ‘tokos’—*born*
- ‘prototokos’—the *firstborn*.

“...from the dead, and the Ruler of the kings of the earth. To Him Who loved us and washed us from our sins in His own blood, and has made us kings and priests to God and His Father; to Him *be* the glory and the sovereignty into the ages of eternity. Amen. Behold, He is coming with the clouds, and every eye shall see Him, and **those who pierced Him**; and all the tribes of the earth shall wail because of Him. Even so, Amen” (vs 5-7).

People have often wondered, ‘Does this mean that those soldiers who pierced Him, that we just read of in John 19, that they are actually going to be alive and see Christ return?’ *No!* How do we answer this question? I’ll show you how we answer the question.

Acts 2:36: “Therefore, let all *the* house of Israel know with full assurance that **God has made this same Jesus, Whom you...** [plural—you all] **...crucified, both Lord and Christ.**” Peter is saying that all the house of Israel has killed Christ. That’s what he’s saying. Why? *Because He died for the sins of the people!* Read that again.

If you’ve crucified Him, then what have you done? *You’ve nailed Him to the cross and you’ve thrust the spear in His side!* So, when it talks about ‘those who pierced him’ (Rev. 1), that’s got to be talking about, collectively, all of the Jews. To this day, collectively, all of the Jews fall into that

category. That’s why when you come back to Zech. 12 you find that there are two fulfillments:

Zechariah 12:10: “**And they shall look upon Me whom they have pierced...**” The Jews, when Christ returns, will see Him and they will know that *they* have crucified Him. That’s why you have the *Spirit of grace and supplication* poured out upon them, otherwise they would never understand it. When God begins to call them, He’s going to do it in a way that they’ll understand. They’re finally going to view Christ as someone that they have crucified, someone that they have pierced.

What we really find is that in His first coming, those Jews who look upon Him were the Jews who rejected Him, in particularly speaking of the high priest, and so forth. They rejected Him and we’ll see the prophecy of it, showing that Christ would be rejected.

Isaiah 53:1: “Who has believed our report?... [none of the Jewish leaders believed it] ...And to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed?”

- Who is it revealed to?
- What did Jesus say?

“...And to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed?” If you don’t believe, how can it be revealed to you? That’s why the question is asked, “Who has believed our report?...” If they haven’t believed it, to whom is God going to reveal it? In order to believe, you have to have it revealed.

Matthew is talking about how they rejected Christ, Matthew 11:25: “At that time Jesus answered and said, ‘I praise You, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that **You have hidden these things from the wise and intelligent...** [they’re the ones who rejected Him] **...and have revealed them to babes....** [to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed] ...Yes, Father, for it was well pleasing in Your sight to do this. All things were delivered to Me by My Father; and no one knows the Son except the Father; neither does anyone know the Father except the Son, and **the one to whom the Son personally chooses to reveal Him**” (vs 25-27).

That answers the second part of this question back in Isa. 53. Let’s see this prophecy where Christ was going to be rejected:

Isaiah 53:2: “For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground; He has no form nor comeliness that we should look upon Him, nor beauty that we should desire Him. **He is despised and rejected of men...** [we will see that even more clearly in Ps. 22] **...a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief; and we hid as it were our faces from Him...**” (vs 2-3).

How many times did the Jews reject Jesus? All you have to do is read the first seven chapters of the book of Acts. That seventh chapter where Stephen gave the final witness to them was their final chance for repentance, but they did not repent. So, the destruction of Jerusalem was sealed on that day. There was no turning back. God gives everyone a chance to repent and change. He even did to the Jews, then, but they refused. Like Stephen said, ‘Oh, you stiff-necked and uncircumcised in heart, you always do resist the Holy Spirit.’

**“...despised and rejected of men; a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief... [the greatest grief of all, because He suffered for the sins of the whole world] ...and we hid as it were our faces from Him, He was despised, and we esteemed Him not”** (v 3). He was rejected!

Let’s come to John 1 and see how John wrote of it in the past tense. Let’s get the impact of it, because all the way through the Old Testament it is telling us that *God was to become a man*. These first three verses, though we know them by heart, we’ve gone over them and you could probably stand up and recite it. I want you to know that this is one of the first places that Satan will attack anyone’s belief in God. *Right here! This is the first place!* Haven’t we seen that with the different changes of doctrine that have come out? *Yes!*

John 1:1: **“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.... [everything that God is] ...He was in the beginning with God. All things came into being through Him, and not even one thing that was created came into being without Him”** (vs 1-3). Here is the God:

- Who did the creating
- Who made mankind
- Who is the LORD God of the Old Testament

—and He comes to the earth as a man.

Verse 14: “And the Word became flesh...” We’ve covered that before.

Verse 10: “He was in the world, and the world came into being through Him, but the world did not know Him.... [rejected Him] ...He came to His own, and His own did not **receive** Him” (vs 10-11). That’s an interesting word in the Greek: *to welcome with a bosom hug, recognizing that he’s part of your own*. They:

- did not receive Him
- did not welcome Him
- did not want Him

Quite a thing that took place! It’s something! You just go through the Gospels and read how many times the scribes, Pharisees and priests:

- seek out to destroy Him
- seek how they might entrap Him
- seek how they might kill Him

All of these things to fulfill the prophecies of the coming of Christ.

### **Scattering of the Jews:**

Zechariah 13:7: “‘Awake, O sword, against **My Shepherd**, and against the Man who is My companion,’ says the LORD of hosts. ‘Strike the Shepherd, and **the sheep shall be scattered**. And I will turn My hand upon the little ones.’”

### **Analysis of verse 7:**

“‘Awake, O sword, against My Shepherd, and against the Man who is My companion’ [equal], says the LORD of hosts....” The only man that could be the *equal* of the LORD of hosts is God Who became a man. No man is equal unto God otherwise—is he? *NO! Obviously not!* This has to refer to Christ.

“...‘Strike the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered. And I will turn My hand upon the little ones.’” We’re going to see that there are actually two fulfillments.

### **1. The Good Shepherd**

Let’s look at the first one that was applied directly to the disciples. We’ll see that Jesus is called *the good Shepherd*.

When we start putting these prophecies together, look at their fulfillments and go back and forth, it becomes so incredible all the things that were prophesied of and everything that took place in Jesus’ life. That’s why we need to have a greater belief and conviction:

- concerning Christ
- concerning the Word of God
- concerning what God has done

*It’s absolutely marvelous!*

John 10:11: “**I am the good Shepherd**. The good Shepherd lays down His life for the sheep.” That’s what Christ did.

### **2. Strike the Shepherd**

Mark is where we see that the prophecy that He would “...Strike the Shepherd and the sheep shall be scattered....” was fulfilled.

Mark 14:27: “Then Jesus said to them, ‘All of you shall be offended in Me in this night... [Remember what they all said? ‘*Oh no Lord, no we won’t.*’ Remember what Peter said?] ...for it is written, “**I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered**.’” This is talking about ‘the

sheep' being those believers in Christ at the time that He was crucified, beginning with His arrest.

Verse 28: "'But after I have risen, I will go before you into Galilee.' Then Peter said to Him, 'Even if all shall be offended, yet, I *shall* not.' And Jesus said to him, 'Truly I say to you, today, in this *very* night, before *the* cock crows twice, you shall deny Me three times.' But he spoke more adamantly, 'If it were necessary for me to die with You, I would not deny You in any way.' And they all spoke in the same manner also" (vs 28-31).

What happened when He was arrested? ***They were all scattered!*** So, it applied directly to the apostles, then He would bring them back after He was raised.

Then an additional fulfillment:

### 3. Scattering and captivity of the Jews in 70<sub>A.D.</sub>

- they smote the Shepherd—Christ
- they crucified Him
- they rejected Him

Then, Jerusalem was to be destroyed and the Jews would be ***scattered into all nations of the world.*** Let's see how this was prophesied, which also gives us some information concerning a secondary prophecy about this.

Zechariah 1:18: "Then I lifted up my eyes and looked, and behold, four horns! And I said to the angel who talked with me, 'What *are* these?' And he answered me, 'These *are* the horns... [a type of a king or a country] ...that have scattered Judah, Israel, and Jerusalem.' And the LORD showed me four craftsmen. And I said, 'What *are* these coming to do?' And He spoke, saying, '***These are the horns which have scattered Judah, so that no man lifted up his head.*** But these have come to terrify them, to throw down the horns of the nations... [Gentiles] ...***who lifted up their horns over the land of Judah to scatter it***'" (vs 18-21). The recompense was going to come in both ways. This was referring:

- to Israel
- to the Jews
- to Jerusalem
- *to scatter them*

Here's why it came, Zechariah 7:8: "And the Word of the LORD came to Zechariah, saying, 'Thus speaks the LORD of hosts, saying, "Judge true judgment, and show mercy and compassion every man to his brother. And do not oppress the widow or the orphan, the stranger or the poor. And do not imagine evil in your heart, *against* your brother." But ***they refused to hearken,*** and turned a

stubborn shoulder, and made heavy their ears against hearing'" (vs 8-11). How many times did Jesus say, 'He that has an ear, let him hear'? *They didn't hear*—did they?

Verse 12: "***And they made their hearts adamant stone...*** [that's what the leaders of Judaism did] ***...against hearing the law*** and the words, which the LORD of hosts has sent through His Spirit, by the former prophets."

What were the prophets prophesying? *All about Christ!* Read the book of Matt. and how many times does it say, 'This was done so it would fulfill that which was written by the prophet Isaiah'? *Over and over and over again!* That's what Matthew wrote in his book.

"...And, therefore, great wrath came from the LORD of hosts. And it will be, as He called, and they did not hear, so *when* they called, and I did not hear,' says the LORD of hosts. 'But ***I scattered them with a whirlwind among all the nations whom they did not know.*** And thus the land has been desolate after them, that no man passed through nor returned: for they laid the pleasant land desolate'" (vs 12-14).

That's exactly what happened to Jerusalem and that area. Especially after the Bar Kafka Revolution was finished in 130<sub>A.D.</sub> The Romans had the 'scorched earth' policy and burned everything. So devastating was that that it changed the climate, it changed the land, and it was desolate, just like Jesus prophesied in the book of Zech.

Let's see how this happened again. What we're talking about in Zech. 7 is the second captivity in 70<sub>A.D.</sub> The Jews should have learned something from their first captivity. Let's look at the first captivity and see how that also has an application of what we're talking about of ***smiting the Shepherd and scattering the sheep.***

Jeremiah 18:11: "Now, therefore, speak to the men of Judah, and to the people of Jerusalem, saying, 'Thus says the LORD, 'Behold, I am forming evil against you, and devising a plan against you. ***Return now, each one from his evil way, and make your ways and your doings good.***'"

Whenever God does this, He gives a way of repentance. That's why when Jesus came preaching the Kingdom of God He says, '*Repent for the Kingdom of God is at hand.*'

Verse 12: "And they said, 'There is no hope; but we will walk after our own ways, and we will each one do *according to* the stubbornness of his evil heart.' Therefore, thus says the LORD, 'Ask now among the nations; who has heard such things? The virgin of Israel has done a very horrible thing.

Does the snow of Lebanon fail from the rock of the field? Or shall the cold waters that come from another place cease to flow? **Because My people have forgotten Me**, they have burned incense to vanity, and they have caused themselves to stumble in their ways *from* the ancient paths, to walk in by-paths, not on the highway, to make their land desolate *and* a perpetual hissing. Everyone who passes by shall be astonished, and will shake his head. **I will scatter them as with an east wind before the enemy; I will show them My back, and not My face, in the day of their calamity**” (vs 12-17). So, they didn’t learn from the first scattering. *That was really something!*

Jeremiah 19:7: “And I will make the counsel of Judah and Jerusalem come to nothing in this place...”

- Did not God do that when they had the council to crucify Christ and get rid of Him?
- Did He not make it void?
- Yes, He did!

He raised Christ from the dead and if that doesn’t void their council, I don’t know anything else that does. *That’s fantastic!*

“...and I will cause them to fall by the sword before their enemies, and by the hands of those who seek their lives. And I will give their dead bodies to be food for the birds of the heavens, and for the beasts of the earth” (v 7).

You read the account of the second captivity during Josephus’ time. As a matter of fact, Josephus records both the first captivity and the second one. The second one was so absolutely hateful and bestial. They had enough food stored for three years in Jerusalem to feed the population of Jerusalem. At the time of the second fall of Jerusalem—it’s captivity in 70<sub>A.D.</sub>—there were three times the number of people in Jerusalem.

The Zealots put everyone under a death oath that they would be with them or kill them. Those who refused they killed. They burned their stores of food. Pretty soon there was nothing to eat in Jerusalem, and they ended up eating their own children. It was so hideous that when Titus came there he decided to just scrape the earth and get rid of this hideous thing. Those Jews who tried to escape... They had 1,000’s and 1,000’s of crosses of dead bodies. Josephus records that there were bodies waiting for crosses. It was such a killing that it was just absolutely beyond description.

When people reject God, that’s what ends up happening. Like He said here, “...And I will give their dead bodies to **be food for the birds of the**

**heavens, and for the beasts of the earth.**” Lots of times they would leave the bodies on the crosses and let the vultures and the buzzards come and pluck the flesh right off the bones. If they needed the cross for another body they would take it down, throw the body on the ground and the dogs and animals would come and eat them. They didn’t bury them. *It was a horrendous thing!*

Verse 8: “And I will make this city a waste and a hissing. Everyone who passes by shall be astonished and shall hiss because of all its plagues. And I will cause them to eat the flesh of their *own* sons and the flesh of their *own* daughters, and they shall each one eat the flesh of his friend in the siege and distress, with which their enemies and those who seek their lives shall afflict them. Then you shall break the jar before the eyes of the men who go with you, and shall say to them, ‘Thus says the LORD of hosts, “Even so I will break this people and this city, as *one* breaks a potter’s vessel that cannot be made whole again. And they shall bury *them* in Tophet until there is no place *left* to bury. I will do this to this place,” says the LORD, “and to its people, and make this city as Tophet. And the houses of Jerusalem, and the houses of the kings of Judah, shall be as defiled as the place of Tophet because of all the houses on whose roofs they have burned incense to all the host of the heavens, and have poured out drink offerings to other gods”’” (vs 8-13).

“Then Jeremiah came from Tophet, where the LORD had sent him to prophesy. And he stood in the court of the LORD’S house, and said to all the people, ‘Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, “Behold, I will bring upon this city and upon all its towns all the evil that I have spoken against it **because they have hardened their necks so that they might not hear My words**”’” (vs 14-15)

When God says He’s going to do something, He’s going to do it. It’s going to be quite a thing when it takes place again this time.

Jeremiah 29:15: “Because you have said, ‘The LORD has raised us up prophets in Babylon.’” They were trusting in those who were not prophets, but they were saying that God has raised up prophets for us in Babylon.

Verse 16: “Therefore, thus says the LORD of the king who sits on the throne of David, and of all the people who dwell in this city, *and* of your brethren who have not gone out with you into captivity; thus says the LORD of hosts, ‘Behold, I will send on them the sword, the famine, and the plague, and will make them like worthless figs which cannot be eaten because they are so rotten. And I will

pursue them with the sword, with the famine, and with the plague, and will make them an astonishment to all the kingdoms of the earth, to be a curse, and a waste, and a hissing, and a reproach, **among all the nations where I have driven them, Because they have not hearkened to My words,** says the LORD, **‘which I sent to them by My servants the prophets, again and again; but you would not hear,’** says the LORD” (vs 16-19). That’s what also happened in 70<sub>A.D.</sub>; there’s the history laid out ahead of us.

### **The Three Elijahs:**

This is the second place that tells us that Christ, or the Messiah, would have a messenger sent before Him; or you could say, a forerunner, as Arnold Fruchtenbaum has said.

Malachi 3:1: “Behold, I will send My messenger... [Malachi in the Hebrew] ...and **he will prepare the way before Me.** And the Lord, Whom you seek, shall suddenly come to His temple, even the Messenger of the covenant, in Whom you delight. Behold, He comes,” says the LORD of hosts.” There was going to be one who would come before Him.

We will see that Isa. 40 also touches on what I touched on earlier concerning the prophet Elijah. This is what the one who was John the Baptist said of himself. This ties right in with Mal. 3:1, about the messenger coming before His face.

Isaiah 40:3: “A voice is calling out in the wilderness, ‘Prepare the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God. Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low... [His second coming] ...and the crooked places shall be made straight, and the rough places plain; and the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see *it* together; for the mouth of the LORD has spoken.’ A voice says, ‘Cry!’ And he said, ‘What shall I cry?’ ‘All flesh *is* grass, and all the beauty of it *is* as the flower of the field. The grass withers, the flower fades because the breath of the LORD blows upon it; surely the people *are* grass. The grass withers, the flower fades; but the Word of our God shall stand forever” (vs 3-8). Then it talks about when Christ’s first coming. Here’s what John the Baptist said:

Verse 9: “Go up for yourself on the high mountain; O you that bring good tidings to Zion. Lift up your voice with strength, O you who tell good tidings to Jerusalem; lift up, do not be afraid. Say to the cities of Judah, ‘Behold your God!’” That’s what John the Baptist did in preparing the way for Christ to come.

Let’s look at this concerning John the Baptist and then this will help us also understand that Christ said that John the Baptist *was* Elijah.

(go to the next track)

Which means:

- there was the original Elijah as recorded in the book of Kings
- there was John the Baptist who came to prepare the way for Christ
- there would be Elijah who will come before the second coming of Christ

John the Baptist was to come ‘in the spirit and power of Elijah,’ but Christ also *called* him Elijah.

We know—and I think we can draw some parallels here, which are very important for us to understand—God does things in a certain way. God will prepare *this Elijah* from birth, just like He did John the Baptist. John the Baptist’s father was a priest and his mother was also a Levitical woman. They were righteous before the Lord. I think that God is going to raise up the coming Elijah in very similar circumstances:

- he will come out of the nation of Judah, though being a Levite
- he will do the same thing that John the Baptist did before the first coming of Christ

I think that when we see that man raised up, then we know it’s going to be close to the end, especially if he’s out there baptizing and saying to believe on Christ. That’s going to be a thing in what is called Israel today. In Israel today, they don’t allow that kind of preaching. If you believe in Christ, they will show you to the borders—*bye-bye!*

Let’s read concerning the message that was given by Gabriel, who came to Zacharias.

Luke 1:15: “For he shall be great before the Lord. And he shall never drink wine or strong drink in any form, but **he shall be filled with the Holy Spirit even from his mother’s womb.**” When he took his first breath the Holy Spirit entered into John the Baptist. Christ was *begotten* of the Holy Spirit, so He was filled with the Holy Spirit from conception.

Verse 17: “**And he shall go before Him...** [the Messiah] **...in the spirit and power of Elijah,** to turn *the* hearts of the fathers to *the* children, and *the* disobedient to *the* wisdom of *the* righteous, to make ready a people prepared for *the* Lord.” You know the rest of the story, he was to come in the spirit and power of Elijah.

We will see what Jesus says about John the Baptist, how He considered him and what He called him:

Matthew 11:7: “And as they were leaving, Jesus said to the multitudes concerning John, ‘What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by *the* wind? But what did you go out to see? A man clothed in soft garments? Behold, those who wear soft *clothing* are in kings’ houses. But what did you go out to see? A prophet? Yes, I tell you, and **one more excellent than a prophet. For this is he of whom it is written...** [Mal. 3:1] ...**“Behold, I send My messenger before Your face, who shall prepare Your way before You.”** Truly I say to you, there has not arisen among *those* born of women *anyone* greater than John the Baptist. But the one who *is* least in the Kingdom of Heaven is greater than he. For from the days of John the Baptist until now, the Kingdom of Heaven is taken with a *great* struggle... [taken by force; eternal life does not come easy; it’s difficult] ...and *the* zealous *ones* lay hold on it. For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John” (vs 7-13).

Now who is going to do the preaching? *It was John the Baptist and Jesus Christ!* The message now was **greater** than the Law and the Prophets.

Verse 14: “And if you are willing to receive it, **he is Elijah who was to come.**” It couldn’t be any clearer. If Jesus said John the Baptist was Elijah, he was Elijah! Was he also the messenger? *Yes, He said both!*

Verse 15: “The one who has ears to hear, let him hear.”

Let’s see what Jesus told His disciples about John the Baptist, Matthew 17:1: “And after six days, Jesus took with *Him* Peter and James and his brother John, and brought them up into a high mountain by themselves. And He was transfigured before them; and His face shined as the sun, and His garments became white as the light” (vs 1-2). This is a tremendous lesson for us to learn. Not only is this of Christ, but it tells us that *God became a man and now the man can be transfigured into God again.*

Also it is a type—if we want to use a forerunner—of what our resurrection will be like. If He can be transformed from flesh into this transcended glorious human being and then be transformed back into flesh again after the vision is over, then those of us who are in the resurrection will ‘see Him like He is, for we’ll be like Him.’

Verse 3: “Then, behold, there appeared to them **Moses and Elijah** talking with Him.” I wonder if this is the one at the right hand and the left hand that the Father has already determined is going to be

there. I don’t know. It doesn’t tell us, but at least He’s talking with what appeared to be Moses and Elijah. This is in a vision.

Verse 4: “And Peter answered *and* said to Jesus, ‘Lord, it is good for us to be here. If You desire, let us make three tabernacles here: one for You, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.’” Peter was anxious to get this whole thing organized and to get it going.

Verse 5: “While he was speaking, a bright cloud suddenly overshadowed them; and behold, a voice out of the cloud said, ‘This is My Son, the Beloved, in Whom I delight. Listen to Him!’” Very akin to the saying, *He who has ears to hear, let him hear.*

Verse 6: “And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their faces in extreme terror. But Jesus came *and* touched them, and said, ‘Arise, and do not be terrified.’ And when they looked up, they saw no one except Jesus alone. Now, as they were descending from the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying, ‘Tell the vision to no one...’” (vs 6-9).

Therefore, we know that Moses and Elijah are not in heaven, but this was a vision of what it will be like when Christ comes to the earth and the resurrection takes place. We know for sure that Heb. 11<sup>[transcriber’s correction]</sup> tells us that all of these—the faithful ones listed—died in faith.

“...Tell the vision to no one until the Son of man has risen from *the* dead.’ Then His disciples asked Him, saying, ‘Why then do the scribes say that Elijah must come first?’ And Jesus answered *and* said to them, **‘Elijah shall indeed come first and restore all things. But I tell you that Elijah has already come,** and they did not recognize him; but they did to him **whatever they desired.** In like manner also, the Son of man is about to suffer from them.’ **Then the disciples understood that He was speaking to them about John the Baptist**” (vs 9-13). This tells us very clearly that John the Baptist was::

1. the voice crying in the wilderness
2. the messenger that was sent before His face

Notice one other thing that took place. It says that Jesus Christ would ‘suddenly come to His temple.’ Whose temple really was it? Jesus did show up on the scene suddenly. Though it was called ‘the Father’s’ house, Who was the One who occupied it? *The One Who became Christ!*

John 2:13: “Now the Passover of the Jews was near, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. And He found in the temple those who were selling oxen and

sheep and doves, and the money exchangers sitting *there*; and after making a scourge of cords, He drove them all out of the temple, *with* both the sheep and the oxen; and He poured out the coins of the money exchangers, and overturned the tables. And to those who were selling the doves, He said, 'Take these things out of here! Do not make **My Father's house** a house of merchandise.' Then His disciples remembered that it was written, 'The zeal of **Your house** has eaten Me up'" (vs 13-17). He did appear *suddenly* and in such a way as to really raise a ruckus.

Let's see where He did it again. He did it at the beginning of His ministry, and He did it at the end of His ministry.

- Don't you think that would have really created a stir?
- Who would have had the gall to come in and do that?
- Don't you think that people remembered that for a long time?

*I'm sure they did!*

Mark 11:15: "Then they came into Jerusalem; and after entering the temple, Jesus began to cast out those who were buying and selling in the temple; and He overthrew the tables of the money exchangers and the seats of those who were selling doves. Moreover, He did not allow anyone to carry a vessel through the temple. And He taught, saying to them, 'Is it not written, "**My house**"...'" (vs 15-17). The first time He calls it *the Father's house*. Who's going to dwell in New Jerusalem? *Christ, the Father and the bride!*

"...But you have made it a den of robbers.' Now, the chief priests and the scribes heard *this*, and they sought how they might destroy Him; for they feared Him, because all the multitudes marveled at His teaching" (vs 17-18). They were afraid of losing their positions. I tell you what, there is nothing more immovable than a religious or political person—especially a bureaucrat—if he is threatened to lose his job. That's what they were worried about.

Did they lose their jobs? *It took another 40 years, but they did lose their jobs!* Not only that:

- they lost their place of employment
- they lost their means of employment
- there were no more sacrifices
- there was no more temple

When God does something, He does it thoroughly, completely. They couldn't merchandise the people anymore. *No way!* So, He came suddenly to His temple *twice*.

We're going to start in the Writings. This pretty well takes care of all the Prophets, showing the prophecies of Jesus in the Prophets.

### **The Writings:**

When you are reading in any of the Writings and when it talks about those things that are forever, I want you to look at it and see if this does not have somewhat to do with Christ or the Kingdom. In many cases you will find that it does. Here is where David wanted to go ahead and build a house for God.

1-Chronicles 17:4: "Go and tell David My servant, 'Thus says the LORD, "You shall not build a house for Me to dwell in, for I have not dwelt in a house since the day that I brought up Israel, even to this day, but have gone from tent to tent, and from one tabernacle *to another*. Wherever I have walked with all Israel, did I speak a word to any of the judges of Israel, whom I commanded to feed My people, saying, 'Why have you not built Me a house of cedars?'"'" (vs 4-6). He didn't say that at all, because God wants the heart; He doesn't want a building.

Remember what happened to us when we as a Church built a house for God. I think if you really understand the Scriptures, any man who endeavors to build a house for God is asking for trouble. God overlooked it, but was there trouble with Solomon? *Yes!* We had our troubles, too.

Verse 7: "'Now, therefore, thus shall you say to My servant David, 'Thus says the LORD of hosts, 'I took you from the pasture, from following the sheep, so that you should be ruler over My people Israel. And I have been with you wherever you have walked, and have cut off all your enemies from before you, and have made you a name like the name of the great men who are in the earth. **And I will ordain a place for My people Israel**'..." (vs 7-9). This is a very key important thing to understand.

When David was given this prophecy concerning the building of the temple, Israel—all 12 tribes—was in their inherited positions; they had the land. That's important to understand. They were, all 12 tribes, under the rule of David.

So, when God says, v 9: "...And I will ordain a place for My people Israel, **and will plant them**..." (v 9), this is talking about the ultimate, second destination of Israel, which was after the northern ten tribes went into captivity. They migrated west and came over into Northwestern Europe and on into England. This is a prophecy of that. The people were already planted in the land. So, why would He say, "...[I] will plant them"?

“...**and they shall live in their place and shall be moved no more**; nor shall the children of wickedness waste them any more as at the beginning, and since the time that I commanded judges to be over My people Israel. And I will subdue all your enemies. And I declare to you that the LORD will build you a house.... [then He begins to explain it]: ...And it shall come to pass, when your days have ended so that you must go *to be* with your fathers, I will raise up your seed after you, who shall be from your sons. And I will make his kingdom sure. **He shall build Me a house, and I will establish his throne forever**” (vs 9-12). We have two things here:

- he would build the temple
- God would establish the throne forever

In order for it to be forever, it has got to come down to the Son of David being Christ. That’s very important to understand. Otherwise, it wouldn’t be forever.

Verse 13: “**I will be his Father, and he shall be My son...**” A prophecy concerning the One Who would become the Father and the One Who would become the Son.

“...And I will not take My steadfast love away from him as I took *it* from him who was before you” (v 13). God never took His mercy away from the One Who became Jesus Christ.

Verse 14: “And I will settle him in My house and in My kingdom forever. And his throne shall be established forever.” That has to be referring to the throne of Christ because it talks about that He shall come and sit on David’s throne. So, it has to be talking about Christ.

Let’s see a parallel account of this in 2-Sam. 7. When you read these accounts, if you really understand what’s it’s saying, there’s a lot in there for us.

2-Samuel 7:8: “Now, therefore, thus shall you say to My servant David, ‘Thus says the LORD of hosts: “I took you from the sheepcote, from following the sheep, to be prince over My people, over Israel. And I was with you wherever you went and have cut off all your enemies out of your sight, and have made you a great name like the name of the great ones in the earth. Moreover, **I will appoint a place for My people Israel...** [again, the same account] **...and will plant them so that they may dwell in a place of their own**, and move no more. Neither shall the sons of wickedness afflict them any more, as before. And even from the time that I commanded judges *to be* over My people of Israel, so will I cause you to rest from all your enemies. Also, the LORD tells you that He will make you a

house”” (vs 8-11). Of course, that was to come down to David.

Verse 16: “And your house and your kingdom shall be made sure **forever** before you. **Your throne shall be established forever**.” He said that if the sun, moon and stars ceased to shine, then that promise could be broken. That’s all part of *The Davidic Covenant*

As I’ve been going through this, brethren, I’ve begun to see that there’s also an underlying covenant—*The Covenant Between God the Father and Jesus Christ* {note sermon series: Covenants in the Bible, [cbcg.org](http://cbcg.org)}. They had a special covenant between Themselves. We see part of it here in the Psa. 2. This has both first and second coming intertwined in it.

Psalms 2:1: “Why do the nations rage and the people plot in vain?... [when they were against Christ] ...The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together against the LORD and against His Christ [Anointed], saying, ‘Let us break Their bands asunder...’” (vs 1-3). Who was the Anointed One? *Christ!* It is a conspiracy against both of Them.

“...and cast away Their cords from us” (v 3). In other words, let’s cut off any control of God to us. Let us do what we’re going to do. We’re surely living in that age right now.

Verse 4: “He who sits in the heavens laughs; the LORD scoffs at them. Then He shall speak to them in His wrath, and in His fury He terrifies them” (vs 4-5). This is part of His first coming. Is that not what He did to Jerusalem to destroy it, vex them? *No doubt about it!*

Verse 6: “Yea, I have set My king upon Zion, My Holy mountain.” That will be when Christ returns. ‘His feet in that day shall stand on the Mount of Olives.’

Verse 7: “I will **declare the decree** of the LORD...” Where do you find this decree? *It’s not written any place else in the Bible!* It’s got to be a decree between the One of Elohim Who became the Father and the One of Elohim Who became the Son.

“...He has said to Me, ‘You are My Son; this day I have begotten You’” (vs 7). This has to be more than just to David. This is got to be to Christ.

Verse 8: “Ask of Me, and I shall give the nations for Your inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for Your possession.” David never got that. Will Christ do that? *Yes!*

Verse 9: “You shall break them with a rod of iron; You shall dash them in pieces like a potter’s

vessel.” That’s what Christ is going to do when He returns. Let’s look at the fulfillment of this.

Verse 7: “I will declare the decree of the LORD. He has said to Me, ‘You are My Son; this day I have begotten You.’” This tells us that:

- God was going to become a man
- He was going to be begotten
- He was also to be born

Let’s see the account of Christ’s begetting. There is only *one day*, and *one instant* in that day, where it could be said, “...this day I have begotten You.” *It has to be one special, particular day!*

Luke 1:30: “Then the angel [Gabriel] said to her, ‘Do not be afraid, Mary, because you have found grace with God; and behold, you shall conceive in *your* womb and give birth to a Son; and you shall call His name Jesus. He shall be great, and shall be called *the* Son of *the* Highest... [the Son of God] ...and *the* Lord God shall give Him the throne of David, His forefather, and **He shall reign over the house of Jacob into the ages, and of His kingdom there shall be no end**” (vs 30-33). Tie in all the prophecies in the book of Daniel.

Verse 34: “But Mary said to the angel, ‘How shall this be, since I have not had sexual relations with a man?’ And the angel answered *and* said to her, ‘*The* Holy Spirit shall come upon you, and *the* power of *the* Highest shall overshadow you; and for this reason, **the Holy One being begotten in you**... [when Gabriel was speaking, the conception, or the begetting, was taking place] ...**shall be called the Son of God**” (vs 34-35)—right at that minute, which fulfills the prophecy: “...**this day I have begotten You**” (Psa. 2:7) It was on this one particular day that that was fulfilled.

Remember, Jesus was the *only begotten* not the *first begotten* of the Father. Jesus was the *firstborn* of Mary

Matthew 1:25<sup>transcriber’s correction</sup>: “...she had given birth to her Son, the **firstborn**... [‘prototokos’] ...and he called His name Jesus..”

Hebrews 1:1: “God, Who spoke to the fathers at different times in the past and in many ways by the prophets, has spoken to us in these last days by **His Son**... [‘You are My Son; this day I have begotten You,’ *the only begotten*] ...Whom He has appointed heir of all things, by Whom also He made the ages” (vs 1-2).

You see how much the Word of God agrees, and the different Scriptures come together—one here and one there—and altogether showing that Christ, indeed, was the Creator?

Verse 3: “Who, being *the* brightness of *His* glory and *the* exact image of His person... [showing He is God] ...and upholding all things by the word of His own power, when He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down at *the* right hand of the Majesty on high.”

When you’re on the right hand of someone, this means that you are equal to that person. That’s why He sat down on the right hand of God. This is showing the power of Christ.

Verse 4: “Having been made so much greater than *any of* the angels, inasmuch as He has inherited a name exceedingly superior to them. For to which of the angels did He ever say, ‘**You are My Son; this day I have begotten You**’?....” (vs 4-5)—quoting Psa. 2:7, “...this day...”; that one day.

“...And again, ‘I will be a Father to Him, and He will be a Son to Me’? And again...” (vs 5-6). When you read the book of Hebrews, all the way through Paul says, ‘And again... And again... And again...’ concerning Scriptures.

Verse 6: “And again, when He brought the **Firstborn** into the world, He said, ‘Let all *the* angels of God worship Him.’” Meaning that even as the Son of God, as a very little infant—because He was the Son of God, the *only begotten and the Firstborn*—He’s worthy of worship. Meaning that ***He was God Who became man!***

All Scripture from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter.

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) Zechariah 12:10
- 2) Malachi 4:5-6
- 3) Zechariah 12:10
- 4) John 19:31-34
- 5) Revelation 1:5-7
- 6) Acts 2:36
- 7) Zechariah 12:10
- 8) Isaiah 53:1
- 9) Matthew 11:25-27
- 10) Isaiah 53:2-3
- 11) John 1:1-3, 14, 10-11
- 12) Zechariah 13:7
- 13) John 10:11
- 14) Mark 14:27-31
- 15) Zechariah 1:18-21;
- 16) Zechariah 7:8-14
- 17) Jeremiah 18:11-17
- 18) Jeremiah 19:7-15
- 19) Jeremiah 29:15-19
- 20) Malachi 3:1
- 21) Isaiah 40:3-9
- 22) Luke 1:15, 17

- 23) Matthew 11:7-15
- 24) Matthew 17:1-13
- 25) John 2:13-17
- 26) Mark 11:15-18
- 27) 1-Chronicles 17:4-14
- 28) 2-Samuel 7:8-11, 16
- 29) Psalm 2:1-9, 7
- 30) Luke 1:30-35
- 31) Matthew 1:25
- 32) Hebrews 1:1-6

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Genesis 3:15
- Revelation 1
- Psalm 22
- Hebrews 11
- Acts 1-7

Also referenced:

Books:

- *Code of Jewish Law* by Solomon Ganzfried and Hyman Goldin
- *A Harmony of the Gospels* by Fred R. Coulter
- *Josephus*

Sermon series: Covenants in the Bible

FRC: nfs  
Transcribed: 04-09-15  
Proofed: bo—4-19-15

## Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament IX In the Psalms Fulfillments in the New Testament #1

Fred R. Coulter

Let's begin in the New Testament because this is very important for us to understand concerning the Scriptures of the Old Testament. 2-Tim. 3 tells us about the Scriptures that we call the Old Testament today. Let's see what they're to lead us to know, understand and believe. Paul is writing to Timothy and giving him instructions on how he needed to conduct his ministry:

2-Timothy 3:14: "But *as for* you, continue in the things that you did learn and were assured of, knowing from whom you have learned *them*; and that from a child you have known the Holy Writings..." (vs 14-15) There may have been some other books of the New Testament written by that time, which were understood to be Scriptures, but this is basically referring to what we call the Old Testament.

"...which are able to make you wise unto salvation through faith, which *is* in Christ Jesus." (v 15). Therefore, that's why in the Old Testament there are so many prophecies of Jesus Christ. As we have seen, profound prophecies over and over again; all the way through, beginning with the very first one in Gen. 3, it shows that God was to become a man. As Arnold Fruchtenbaum in his book *Messianic Christology* said, 'God/man.'

Verse 16: "All Scripture *is* God-breathed and *is* profitable for doctrine, for conviction, for correction, for instruction in righteousness; so that the man of God may be complete, fully equipped for every good work" (vs 16-17). There are two ways that this could apply.

1. To Timothy as a minister that he is to be well equipped with the Word of God.
2. For anyone who studies the Scriptures, that you can be well equipped as someone who studies the Scriptures; that you can grow into that perfection that God wants you to have.

We're going to see in the Psalms that there are many of the direct words of Christ—which we find in the New Testament that He said—that were actually prophesied in the Psalms. You don't find that as much in the other prophecies. We find prophecies about events and circumstances, but we don't find the *exact* words. In the book of Psalms we will see that many times the One Who is Christ is actually talking to the One Who became God the Father.

Psalm 16:7: "I will bless the LORD Who has given me counsel; my heart also instructs me in the nights." Think of this as God the Father and Christ; Christ is the One Who is being instructed.

Verse 8: "I have set the LORD always before me..." That's talking of Christ toward God the Father, as well as David toward the Lord of the Old Testament, Who became Jesus Christ.

"...Because He is at my right hand, I shall not be moved. Therefore, My heart is glad, and My glory rejoices; My flesh also shall rest in safety, for **You will not abandon My soul to the grave; neither will You allow Your Holy One to see corruption**" (vs 8-10). That has to be part of the special covenant between the One Who became God the Father and the One Who became Jesus Christ.

Verse 11: "You will make known to Me the path of life; in Your presence is fullness of joy. At Your right hand are pleasures forevermore."

Let's see the fulfillment of this in Acts 2. Peter quoted this Psalm in reference to Christ, right after Christ's resurrection. He makes it very clear that this has nothing to do with David; but it has to do *only* with Christ.

Remember, when we first started this series it was Jesus Christ Who had to come and open the minds of the apostles concerning the Law, the Prophets and the Psalms of all the things that are written concerning Him.

Acts 2:23: "Him, having been delivered up by the predetermined plan and foreknowledge of God..." We are going to see that even some of the supposedly small details concerning the death of Jesus Christ and His crucifixion were prophesied by the One Who was going to suffer it, thousands of years before it took place.

When you go through, especially the book of Matt., you will see: '*And this was done that it might be fulfilled that which was written by the prophet Isaiah, which said....*' Here, we have one where Peter is going to give a quote: '*...that which is fulfilled....*,' from the book of Psalms.

"...by the predetermined plan and foreknowledge of God, you have seized by lawless hands *and* have crucified and killed. *But* God has raised Him up, having loosed the throes of death, because it was not possible *for* Him to be held by it;

for David speaks concerning Him, 'I foresaw the Lord before Me continually; for He is at My right hand, so that I may not be moved. Therefore, My heart rejoiced and My tongue was glad; moreover,, My flesh also shall rest in hope...[here's that direct quote]: ...**for You will not leave My soul in the grave...** [hades; this is not the place of Gehenna fire] ...**nor will You allow Your Holy One to see corruption.** You did make Me to know *the* ways of life; You will fill Me with joy with Your countenance'" (vs 23-28). After he quoted that, Peter said this:

Verse 29: "Men *and* brethren, let *me* speak to you freely concerning the patriarch **David, that he is both dead and buried, and his tomb is with us to this day.**" He's showing that this didn't apply to David. This applied to Christ. So, the words back there are actually Christ's talking to God the Father.

Verse 30: "Therefore, being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn to him in an oath *that* from *the* fruit of his loins, as concerning *the* flesh, He would raise up the Christ to sit upon his throne; **He foresaw *this* and spoke concerning the resurrection of Christ, that His soul was not left in the grave, nor did His flesh see corruption.** This Jesus has God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses" (vs 30-32).

That was really something! Can you imagine what it was like when the apostles saw Christ just all of a sudden appear in the room where they were assembled for fear of the Jews and said, 'Peace be to you.' I just imagine the hair on the back of their necks just stood up. What a thing! *The very first man to be resurrected from the dead to eternal life!* Quite a thing!

Just before He ascended into heaven, they were standing there talking with Him. Then all of a sudden He rises right up in the air and just disappears out of their sight. They stood up there gawking/looking, and the angel said, 'You men of Judea, why are you standing there looking up into the heaven? You go into Jerusalem and wait until you're endued with power from on high.' That was really something. *Quite a thing!*

All of these Psalms that I'm going to give here were not in Fruchtenbaum's book; he only covered some of the major ones. I think he jumped from Ps. 22 to 69, then to 110 and then to 118. That's all he has. I've added quite a few to it.

Let's apply this Scripture to Christ as viewed by God the Father, Psalm 17:8: "Keep me as the apple of Your eye; hide me under the shadow of Your wings from the face of the wicked who oppress me—my deadly enemies who encircle me"

(vs 8-9). Weren't the Jewish religious leaders constantly seeking:

- to destroy Him?
- to arrest Him?
- to do away with Him?
- *Yes!*

Verse 10: "They have closed their pitiless hearts; with their mouth they speak proudly. They have now surrounded us in our steps. They have set their eyes to cast us down to the earth, they are like a lion that longs to tear his prey, and like a young lion stalking in secret places" (vs 10-12). Stealthily waiting so they could leap on Him, get Him and take Him.

Verse 13: "Arise, O LORD, confront him, bring him down; deliver my soul from the wicked by Your sword, from men by Your hand, O LORD, from men of the world whose portion is in this life, and whose belly You fill with Your treasure. They are full of children, and will leave their riches to their babes. As for me, **I will behold Your face in righteousness; I shall be satisfied, when I awake, with Your likeness**" (vs 13-15). That can apply to Christ at His resurrection. That also can apply to David when he is resurrected. Quite an interesting dual application of it here.

In Ps. 22 is some of the very words and thoughts of Christ while He was being crucified and hanging on the cross. We will look at the fulfillment of these as we go through each of the verses.

Psalm 22:1: "**My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me,** and *why are You so far from helping Me, and from the words of My groaning?* O my God, I cry in the daytime, but You do not answer; and in the night season, and am not silent. Yet, You are Holy, O You enthroned upon the praises of Israel" (vs 1-3).

Let's see where this is fulfilled. This is one of the very key pivotal Psalms proving that Christ was indeed the Lord God sent from heaven and the Savior of mankind.

Matthew 27:46: "And about the ninth hour, Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, '**Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?**' That is, '**My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?**'" The *exact* words from Ps. 22. *What a prophecy!*

Can you imagine from Christ's point of view, as the Lord God of the Old Testament, actually inspiring those words so that David could write them down, and knowing that that's what You are going to say right at the end of Your suffering and crucifixion. Why was it that God had to forsake him? *He didn't leave Him alone entirely!* But He

forsook Him and the darkness covered the whole earth from the sixth hour until about the ninth hour. That's because ***Christ had to bear all the sins of all mankind in Himself, alone!*** That's why!

David didn't necessarily feel this way, but here's how Christ felt, Psalm 22:6: "But I am a worm, and no man; a reproach of men and despised by the people. **All who see Me mock Me; they shoot out the lip; they shake the head, saying, 'He trusted on the LORD; let Him deliver Him; let Him rescue Him, since He delights in Him!'**" (vs 6-8). Let's see the fulfillment of this:

Matthew 27:39: "Then those who were passing by **railed at Him, shaking their heads, and saying, 'You Who would destroy the temple and rebuild it in three days, save Yourself. If You are the Son of God, come down from the cross'**" (vs 39-40). Satan is always there to tempt. That's the way people do: 'Prove it to me!'

Verse 41: "And in the same way also the chief priests were mocking, with the scribes and elders, saying, '**He saved others, but He does not have the power to save Himself...**'" (vs 41-42). Think of the cynicism and think of just the scoffing that they had at that time.

Of course, the disciples didn't understand about the coming resurrection. All the women were standing off way back watching from a distance. I imagine they were wondering: What is going on? The disciples were hoping that Christ would restore the Kingdom while He was still alive and:

- there He was *dying*
- there He was *being mocked*
- there He was *being put down* by the very leaders of their nation

**"...If He is the King of Israel, let Him come down now from the cross, and we will believe Him.... [belief does not come by a magic show; belief comes from the heart] ...He trusted in God; let Him deliver Him now, if He will have Him. For He said, 'I am the Son of God'!"** (vs 42-43).

Let's see that it shows that He was the Son of God, Psalm 22:9: "For You are He who took Me out of the womb, causing Me to trust while on My mother's breasts. **I was cast upon You from birth; You are My God from My mother's womb....** [He knew exactly what He had been through] ...Be not far from Me; for trouble is near, for there is none to help. **Many bulls** have encircled around Me..." (vs 9-12). Bulls! Liken this unto *powerful demons* or powerful personages, but more than likely powerful demons.

I imagine that when Christ was there on the cross and He was dying, that there were demons all around, hideously gleeful that finally they are able to kill the Son of God, not knowing that He would be resurrected and defeat them completely. What sometimes looks like a defeat to human beings, is only opening the door for victory to God. That's why God says, 'Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of His saints' because the saint has made it and is going to be in the resurrection.

Therefore, here's Christ, "...Many bulls have encircled around Me strong bulls of Bashan have surrounded Me. They opened wide their mouths at Me, like a ravening and a roaring lion" (vs 12-13). Just hideous in their glee and hatefulness that Christ was dying. Here's how He felt:

Verse 14: "I am poured out like water... [showing that He is losing all of His strength] ...and all My bones are out of joint..." How would His bones be out of joint? When they nailed Him to the cross and they took that big 'stauros'—*stake*—and dropped it in the hole in the ground and the thud just pulled the joints right out. He truly, truly suffered.

"...My heart is like wax; it is melted in the midst of My bowels.... [He could just feel His life coming right out of Him] ...My strength is dried up like a potsherd, and My tongue clings to My jaws; dogs have surrounded Me; a band of evildoers have encircled Me; they have pierced My hands and My feet; and You have brought Me into the dust of death. I can count all My bones; they look and gloat over Me" (vs 14-17).

Let's see the fulfillment of this. It's quite a thing! I wonder what Christ thought and what David thought as David wrote these words down. David never went through any of these things that is described in Psa. 22. He didn't experience those, only Christ. I imagine that after David wrote that down he probably said to himself: Why did I write that? Nevertheless, he did.

Matthew 27:36: "And they sat down there to keep guard over Him. And they put up over His head His accusation, written, 'This is Jesus, the King of the Jews.' And two robbers were crucified with Him, one at *the* right hand and one at *the* left" (vs 36-38).

They all deserted Him, Luke 23:48: "And all the people who had gathered together to this sight, after seeing the things that took place, returned beating their breasts. But all those who knew Him stood off at a distance observing these things, *the* women also who had accompanied Him from Galilee" (vs 48-49).

In John, we'll read the fulfillment of this Scripture first and then we'll go back and read it prophesied in Psa. 22.

John 19:23: “Now the soldiers, after they had crucified Jesus, took His garments and made four parts, a part for each soldier, and the coat *also*. But the coat was seamless, woven *in one piece* from the top all the way throughout. For this reason, they said to one another, ‘Let us not tear it, but let us cast lots for it *to determine* whose it shall be’; **that the Scripture might be fulfilled which says, ‘They divided My garments among them, and they cast lots for My vesture.’** The soldiers, therefore, did these things” (vs 23-24).

Notice what a finite, little detail this was that was prophesied, Psalm 22:18: “**They divide My garments among them and cast lots** upon My vesture.” I wonder how the Roman soldiers felt.

- Do you think that they even had a clue that they were being used of God to fulfill that prophecy? *Of course not!*
- Can God work through evil and carnal men to fulfill His will to the very letter of something prophesied thousands of years before? *Without a doubt!*

That’s a very important prophecy because it’s seemingly such a small thing, but it was fulfilled right at the feet of Christ while He was hanging on the cross. *That’s something!*

- here are His thoughts
- here are the things that kept Christ going
- here are the things that kept Him looking to the hope that God set before Him of resurrecting Him

—that we already saw, Psalm 16:10: “**...You will not abandon My soul to the grave; neither will You allow Your Holy One to see corruption....**”

Psalm 22:19: “But You, O LORD, be not far from Me; O My strength, hasten to help Me! Deliver My soul from the sword, My precious *life* from the power of the dog. Save Me from the lion’s mouth; yea, and from the wild ox’s horns. You have answered Me. **I will declare Your name to My brethren; in the midst of the congregation I will praise You.** You who fear the LORD, praise Him; all of you, the seed of Jacob, glorify Him; and stand in awe of Him all of you, the seed of Israel” (vs 19-23).

Let’s see where this is fulfilled and that He was looking forward to the time of the resurrection of the saints when He would proclaim the name of the Father to *all the brethren*. That’s all of us who will be in the first resurrection. Heb. 2 is really quite a profound thing, talking about the ultimate destiny of man.

Hebrews 2:8: “‘You did put all things in subjection under his feet.’ For in subjecting all

things to him, He left nothing *that was* not subjected to him.... [showing the tremendous capacity of man] **...But now we do not yet see all things subjected to him....** [it’s not the time in God’s plan] ...But we see Jesus, Who *was* made a little lower than *the* angels, crowned with glory and honor on account of suffering the death, **in order that by the grace of God He Himself might taste death for everyone**” (vs 8-9)—talking now about the crucifixion.

That’s why, brethren, when you are baptized and you are put into that watery grave, you are conjoined into the death and crucifixion of Christ, in a covenant pledge to God and God’s covenant pledge to you that if you die the symbolic death in the watery grave, God will give you eternal life. Just like Christ, should “...taste death for everyone.”

Verse 10: “Because it was fitting for Him **for Whom all things were created, and by Whom all things exist, in bringing many sons unto glory...**” *That’s God’s purpose!*

I don’t know what it’s going to be like in the resurrection, but all of us who have these bodies that are wearing down, it’s going to be something to be resurrected and have a glorious body that looks like Christ, have a body of spirit and to live forever. That’s what Christ was keeping His mind on. That’s what He was thinking on when He was on the cross.

“...to make the Author of their salvation perfect through sufferings. For both He Who is sanctifying and those who are sanctified *are* all of one; for which cause **He is not ashamed to call them brethren**” (vs 10-11).

Think on this for a minute: When Jesus told Mary Magdalene, ‘Don’t weep Mary. Don’t touch Me for I haven’t ascended to the Father, yet. Go and tell the disciples *that I ascend unto My God and to your God.*’ That’s why we are called *brethren!* That’s something; *the brethren of Christ!* So, when you’re referred to *His* ‘brethren,’ it’s not just some title because we come together in a congregation. *You’re the brethren of Christ,* “...bringing many sons unto glory...”

“...He is not ashamed to call them **brethren**, saying, ‘**I will declare Your name to My brethren; in the midst of the Church I will sing praise to You.**’ And again, ‘I will be trusting in Him.’ And again, ‘Behold, I and the children whom God has given Me’” (vs 11-13). That’s what Christ was thinking of while He was on the cross and all these thoughts of Ps. 22 going through His mind. Whenever:

- you’re in trouble
- you have a trial
- you have a difficulty
- you have sickness

- you have an infirmity that comes upon you
  - ✓ think upon the glory of the resurrection that is going to be
  - ✓ think upon what God is going to give you

Just like Christ did when He was on the cross; when He was at His very **lowest physically**, He was at his very **strongest spiritually** and looking forward to the time.

Psa. 22 is really a powerful central fact of the prophecy of Christ. You compare this about the prophecies of men; let's use weathermen: How many times while they're looking at the satellite and seeing the picture, they're still wrong? Yet, this shows the greatness of God that thousands of years ahead of time, He could predict:

- the thoughts
- the words
- the actions
- the attitude

right down to the smallest little thing and even make carnal soldiers do His will and not even comprehend that they did.

Psalm 22:24: "For He [Christ] has not despised nor abhorred the affliction of the afflicted, and He has not hidden His face from him, but when he cried to Him, He heard. **From You comes my praise in the great congregation...**" (vs 24-25).

This is Christ saying to God the Father, 'My praise of You shall be in "...the great congregation..."—the resurrection. I imagine this is going to happen right on the Sea of Glass when we're resurrected and meet Christ there. We're going to hear Christ sing, and we're all going to sing. We're going to hear Christ praise the name of the Father in the midst of "...the great congregation..."

"...I will pay my vows before those who fear Him. The meek shall eat and be satisfied... [God's way in this life and God's eternal life at the resurrection] ...those who seek the LORD shall praise Him; may your heart live forever. All the ends of the earth shall remember and turn to the LORD... [a projection now, down into the Millennium and on into the Great White Throne Judgment] ...and all the families of the nations shall worship before You" (vs 25-27).

The vast vision that Christ had, the focus that He had to keep His mind on God's purpose rather than His own physical circumstances, though:

- He was poured out like water
- His heart was melting within Him

- all of His bones were out of joint
- He was dying on the cross

Verse 28: "For the kingdom is the LORD'S and He rules over the nations." The ultimate goal of all that God is going to do through this crucifixion. *What a thing!*

Verse 29: "All the **rich** of the earth shall eat and worship..."—relating to the *spiritual fullness of God*. All of those that will be spiritually full of God on the earth shall eat and worship. What did Christ say? *Except you eat of My flesh and drink of My blood you have no life in you!* This is a direct reference to it, going back to John 6.

"...all those who go down to the dust shall bow before Him; even he who cannot keep his own soul alive.... [everyone is going to have to rely on God] ...**A seed shall serve Him...**" We are the seed!

There's a prophecy of that *seed* in Gen. 15. What I want you to understand, brethren, is that all of those who are the brethren of Christ and have the Spirit of Christ, are of the "...seed [that] shall serve Him..."

Genesis 15:5: "And He brought him outside and said, 'Look now toward the heavens and number the stars—if you are able to count them.' And He said to him, '**So shall your seed be.**'" That is the *seed* to serve God the Father through Jesus Christ. The stars picture all the glory that's going to be given to *that seed*. That's quite something to know. This tells us:

- how we need *to think* when we're in trouble
- how we need *to pray* when we're down and cornered
- how we need *to look to God* and praise Him in His glory, in spite of all the things that go on

Let's keep this in mind. Here is a promise from the very mouth of Christ. He makes a contrast here. Matt. 13 is the parable of the sower. I want to get this as a contrast so that you can see that lots of times we end up like the man who was envious of the wicked for their prosperity and all the things that they had. He wasn't thinking correctly. He didn't have his trial in perspective.

Matthew 13:37: "And He answered *and* said to them, 'The One Who sows the good seed is the Son of man; and the field is the world; and the good seed, these are the **children of the kingdom**; but the tares are the **children of the wicked one**'" (vs 37-38). The wicked one is there to try and tear down the children of God.

Verse 39: “Now, the enemy who sowed them is the devil; and the harvest is *the* end of the age, and the reapers are the angels. Therefore, as the tares are gathered and consumed in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this age. The Son of man shall send forth His angels, and they shall gather out of His kingdom all the offenders and those who are practicing lawlessness; and they shall cast them into the furnace of fire; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. **Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father.** The one who has ears to hear, let him hear” (vs 39-43).

Whatever your trial or difficulty you go through, have the same attitude that Christ had as exemplified in Psa. 22. Don’t let anything take that away from you. Don’t ever let that leave your mind and your heart, and never get so focused on the physical problems and difficulties that you are having that you take your mind off Christ, that you take your mind off the goal. *Keep it there always!* God will bless you in it.

Psalms 22:30: “**A seed shall serve Him;** it shall be told of the LORD to the coming generation”—a nation; we are that nation, brethren. Whoever has the spirit of God is that nation. Isn’t that something?

Verse 31: “They shall come and **shall declare His righteousness unto a people that shall yet be born...**” That’s a prophecy of preaching the righteousness of Christ going into all the world that had yet not even come into existence.

“...that **He** has done this” (v 31)—God has done it. This could also have the meaning that He has finished it, going back and referring to the crucifixion. Let’s see that fulfilled:

John 19:28: “After this, Jesus, **knowing that all things had now been finished...** [He knew everything was done that He was to do in His life in the flesh] ...**so that the Scripture might be fulfilled,** said, ‘I thirst.’ Now, a vessel full of vinegar was sitting *there*. And after filling a sponge with vinegar and putting it on a *stick of* hyssop... [a long stick that was able to hold the sponge] ...they put it up to *His* mouth. And so, when Jesus had received the vinegar, **He said, ‘It is finished.’**.... [He knew all things that were to be accomplished were accomplished] ...And bowing His head, He yielded up *His* spirit” (vs 28-30).

(go to the next track)

When I was a kid I went to church a couple to times I suppose. In particular I remember that it wasn’t that I was opposed to going to church, it’s just that we never went to church, any kind of church. Once in a while we would go.

I remember hearing them recite Psalm 23:1—I couldn’t figure it out, especially when I heard: “The LORD is my Shepherd; I shall not want....” In my mind as a kid, it registered this way: ‘The Lord is my Shepherd, I shall not want Him.’ That’s how it registered in my mind and I couldn’t figure out what kind of thing this was; but it means: I shall lack nothing.

Let’s take this Psalm and apply this to the time that Christ was just resurrected, just before He left the tomb. Let’s put it in that perspective.

Verse 1: “The LORD is my Shepherd; I shall not want.... [I shall lack nothing] ...He makes me to lie down in green pastures; He leads me beside the still waters. He restores my soul... [which it was, by the power of the resurrection] ...He leads me in the paths of righteousness for His name’s sake. Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death... [which Christ had to do and He died] ...I will fear no evil, for You are with me; Your rod and Your staff, they comfort me. You prepare a table for me in the presence of my enemies...” (vs 1-5).

*What a table that was!* When He was resurrected and walked out of that tomb, the world has never been the same! The enemies were so confounded they didn’t know what to do. They even bribed the guards and to this very day, the Jews say that the disciples came and stole His body away. The enemies didn’t know what to do.

- no lie could cover it
- no story could change it
- no amount of money could make the circumstances the way that they wanted

“...You anoint my head with oil; my cup runs over (v 5). I imagine that when He was resurrected back to eternal life, His joy and cup was running over.

Verse 6: “Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life... [His life is eternal] ...and I shall dwell in the house of the LORD forever.” I think that gives a little more meaning to Psa. 23, if you apply it to Christ just right after He was resurrected.

Let’s look at the *ascension* Psalm. This is also a prophecy of Jesus. I just imagine that after Christ was resurrected—because He had to be in the heart of the earth exactly three days and three nights—He was resurrected and He prayed Psa. 23. I’m speculating on the circumstances, so don’t hold me to absolute, definitive doctrine, but I’m just trying to piece everything together.

I imagine that He went out to the Garden of Gethsemane and prayed there most of the night, thanking and praising God. When the women came

to the grave early in the morning to find Him, He was risen; He was gone. The tomb was open. He finally talked to Mary Magdalene and said, 'Don't touch Me. I haven't ascended to my Father.' Right after that, He ascended to the Father.

This is probably the scene that took place. What was it like when Christ came to God the Father and His throne on the Sea of Glass that's before the throne of God, with the 24 elders that are there, the four living creatures and the rainbow which is all around the throne? Here is Christ:

- coming to be accepted as that perfect sacrifice
- coming to be accepted as God Who became man, Who was resurrected back to His existence as God
- coming to receive His glory again

Psalms 24:7: "Lift up your heads, O you gates; and be lifted up, O you everlasting doors; that the King of glory may come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle" (vs 7-8). *He overcame death and Satan! That's the greatest, most powerful battle that there has ever been!*

Verse 9: "Lift up your heads, O you gates; lift them up, you everlasting doors; that the King of glory may come in. Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, He is the King of glory. Selah" (vs 9-10).

Just imagine the celebration that went on with God the Father, the 24 elders and the myriads of angels. I wonder what the hymn was that the angels sang to Christ. I think we have part of that back in Rev. 5, where it says He's worthy of:

- power
- honor
- glory
- riches
- wisdom

*Quite a thing!*

Psalms 31:5: "**Into Your hand I commit My spirit**... [David probably said, 'I wonder why I said that, because I'm not dying?'] ...You have redeemed Me, O LORD God of Truth."

Let's see the fulfillment of that Scripture in Luke. This really is tremendous and exciting, brethren, when you understand the great detail of these prophecies of Christ in the Old Testament. As we started this series, I remember that the question was: How did the apostles preach Christ when they only had the Old Testament? There is an awful lot in

the Old Testament. They preached powerfully, they wrote magnificently and preserved it for us.

Luke 23:46: "And after crying out with a loud voice, Jesus said, '**Father, into Your hands I commit My spirit.**' And when He had said these things, He expired"—gave up the spirit; 'pneuma,' in the Greek. He prophesied to His very last words.

What other book in the world would there be that you could sit down, study and piece things together that were written thousands of years apart, and be so accurate and precise, that it was identical to what was prophesied? You think about one of man's greatest achievements, which was sending one of the Martian-landers to Mars. They couldn't even get a radio signal out of it.

Here is a far greater achievement: that the very words were written down, preserved and thousands of years later were spoken exactly as it was said. What *book* in the world besides the Bible has anything like that? *NONE! I tell you, none!* I've read the Koran; it's a dull drag. There's nothing in there like written in the Bible. I haven't read any of the Buddhist writings, but if I read those, I'm sure it would also be a dull philosophical drag. No prophecies explicit and down to the very finite way of prophesying about Christ. *This is something!*

Psalms 38:10: "My heart pants; my strength fails me; as for the light of my eyes, it also is gone from me.... [these could also be the very thoughts of Christ as He was dying] ...My loved ones and my friends stand apart from my plague; and my neighbors stand far off" (vs 10-11). Let's see the fulfillment of this in Luke.

Luke 23:49: "But all those who knew Him stood off at a distance observing these things, *the* women also who had accompanied Him from Galilee." I've often wondered at this very point: What did His mother Mary think?

It tells of Mary, that as Christ was growing and things happened, she remembered them in her heart. I just wonder what she was thinking at this time. Then, can you imagine what it was when she saw Him when He was resurrected? We're talking about a God:

- Who is so marvelous
- Who is so great
- Who has done such a wonderful thing

*So that we may be brought into contact with Him and receive His Spirit!*

- that's why He has called *the weak*
- that's why He has called the lame
- that's why He has called *the halted*

*That they may glorify Him and not the flesh of their own existence!*

Here's another prophecy of Christ. We're going to see how that was fulfilled in the New Testament:

Psalms 40:6: "Sacrifice and offering You did not desire..." Though God commanded it, it's not God's desire that the ultimate thing be sacrificed in offering, because **God wants the heart** of the individual, not the dead animal on the altar.

"...My ears You have opened; burnt offering and sin offering You have not required. Then I said, 'Lo, I come; in the scroll of the book it is written of Me; I delight to do Your will, O My God; and Your Law is within My heart.' I have preached righteousness in the great congregation; lo, I have not kept back my lips, O LORD, You know. I have not hidden Your righteousness within my heart; I have declared Your faithfulness and Your salvation; I have not hidden Your loving kindness and Your Truth from the great congregation.... [He preached the Word of God] ...Do not withhold Your tender mercies from me, O LORD; let Your loving kindness and Your Truth always preserve me, for evils without number have encircled me; my iniquities..." (vs 6-12).

Now it's blending back to David, here. We know that Christ did not sin, but He was *made sin* that we could be the righteousness of God. They weren't *His iniquities*, directly, when referring to Christ, but the iniquities that He took upon Him as the sin offering.

"...have taken hold on me, so that I am not able to look up; they are more than the hairs of my head, and my heart fails me. Be pleased, O LORD, to deliver me; O LORD, make haste to help me" (vs 12-13).

Let's see where this is fulfilled. We will see that the Apostle Paul was inspired to add another little phrase.

Hebrews 10:5: "For this reason, when He comes into the world, He says, '**Sacrifice and offering You did not desire...** [the phrase that Paul was inspired to write]: **...but You have prepared a body for Me**'"—referring to the very fleshly body that He received. Also, you can use a spiritual analogy and draw this directly to the Body of Christ being the Church. Did not God call those to be added to the Church right at the very beginning and all the way down to our time? *No question about it!*

Verse 6: "You did not delight in burnt offerings and *sacrifices* for sin. Then said I, 'Lo, I come (as it is written of Me in the scroll of the book) to do Your will, O God'" (vs 6-7). This is quite an

unusual thing. Notice, He came to do the will of God.

Verse 8: "In the saying above, *He said*, 'Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and *sacrifices* for sin (which are offered according to the *priestly law*) You did not desire nor delight in' Then He said, 'Lo, I come to do Your will, O God.'... [What was His will?] ...He takes away the first *covenant*... [the first covenant given to Israel] ...in order that He may establish the second *covenant*... [the New Covenant unto eternal life] ...**by Whose will we are sanctified**..." (vs 8-10). Stop and think about that, brethren:

- God the Father has drawn you
- God the Father has led you to repentance
- God the Father has given you the Holy Spirit
- God the Father has sanctified you Himself in Christ

That's a pretty powerful thing to understand.

"...through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ **once for all**" (v 10). That's why He didn't want burnt offerings. One day the Jews are going to understand that and they're going to repent. It's going to be a mighty repentance when it happens.

Psa. 45—here are some more things concerning Jesus, the prophecies concerning Him and what He would do and what He would be. This is really an amazing thing. In preparing this I was just kind of awestruck. How that:

- you can go to the book of Psalms, and see the fulfillment the New Testament
- you can go to the Law and see the fulfillment in the New Testament
- you can go to the Prophets and you can see the fulfillment in the New Testament

*over and over and over again*

- Which gives us how many witnesses to Christ as the Messiah?
- Which gives us how many witnesses that God became a man?

*Literally hundreds when it's all over and done!*

Psalms 45:6: "Your throne, **O God**... [Christ is called God] ...is forever and ever; a scepter of justice... [righteousness] ...is the scepter of Your kingdom. You love righteousness and hate wickedness... [that's all a part of loving God] ...therefore, God, **Your God**, has anointed You with the oil of gladness above Your fellows" (vs 6-7). Here it's speaking of two Gods:

- "...therefore, God, Your God..."

- Christ is "...O God..."—God
- "...Your God..." is the Father

"...has anointed You with the oil of gladness above Your fellows" (v 7)—because Christ is the Firstborn among many brethren. He is the First of the firstfruits.

Let's see this fulfilled. Again, another direct quote. To make this even more astounding, you stop and think about it for a minute: All of these things and all of these prophecies are fulfilled in the one man Jesus Christ.

As human beings, if we give guesses and we give prophecies, we may be lucky to hit it here, hit it there, or hit it the other thing, but not all of these things together in the person of one man. *This is something!*

Hebrews 1:6: "And again, when He brought the Firstborn..."—not begotten. Whenever it refers to Christ as *begotten*, it is: *the only begotten*: 'monogene.' This word in the Greek is 'prototokos' meaning *firstborn*:

- 'proto'—*first*
- 'tokos'—*born*
- 'prototokos'—*firstborn*

"...into the world, He said, 'Let all *the* angels of God worship Him.' Now, on the one hand, of the angels He says, 'Who makes His angels spirits, and His ministers a flame of fire.' But on the other hand, **of the Son He says, 'Your throne, O God...** [Christ is God!] *...is* into the ages of eternity; a scepter of righteousness *is* the scepter of Your kingdom. You loved righteousness and hated lawlessness; because of this, **God, even Your God,** has anointed You with *the* oil of gladness above Your companions'" (vs 6-9). There it is, a direct prophecy fulfilled.

If you were a defense attorney, how could even the prosecuting attorney, the devil, deny these things. You take all of these facts, lay out all these prophecies and all the Truths—one after another, and build and build—even to the worst skeptic in the world, it's undeniable that Jesus is the Christ.

Here is even a prophecy of *the betrayal*! Jesus knew *from the beginning* that He was going to be betrayed. Isn't that amazing? Here's the prophecy of it:

Psalms 55:12: "For it is not an enemy who reviled me—then I could have borne it. It is not one who hates me who magnified himself against me—or I would hide myself from him. But **it is you, a man my equal, my companion...** [my guide, my acquaintance] **...and my familiar friend.** We took sweet counsel together and walked into the house of God with the throng" (vs 12-14).

- Was not Judas there when He walked into the temple?
- Was not Judas also sent out on the mission to heal the sick and to preach the Gospel in all the cities?
- Was he not one that came back and said, 'Lord even the demons are subject to us through Your name.'?

Let's see that fulfilled:

Verse 20: "He has put forth his hands against those who were at peace with him; he has broken his covenant. The words of his mouth were smoother than butter, but war was in his heart; his words were softer than oil, yet, they were drawn swords" (vs 20-21). That's exactly what happened with Judas. Let's look and see how slick he was. We know Judas betrayed Jesus for 30 pieces of silver, which was the price of a dead slave.

Matthew 26:20: "And after evening had come, He sat down with the twelve. And as they were eating, He said, '**Truly I say to you, one of you shall betray Me.**' And being sorely grieved, each of them began to say to Him, 'Am I *the one*, Lord?' But He answered and said, 'He who dipped *his* hand with Me in the dish, he shall betray Me. The Son of man indeed goes, as it has been written concerning Him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! It would be better for him if that man had not been born.' **Then Judas, who was betraying Him, answered and said, 'Am I *the one*, Master?'** He said to him, 'You have said *it*'" (vs 20-25). Then, he went out and betrayed Him for 30 pieces of silver.

Let's see how the betrayal took place and how it was portrayed as being a friend:

John 18:1: "After saying these things, Jesus went out with His disciples *to a place* beyond the winter stream of Kidron, where *there* was a garden into which He and His disciples entered. **And Judas, who was betraying Him,** also knew of the place because Jesus had often gathered there with His disciples. **Then Judas, after receiving a band and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, came there with torches and lamps and weapons.** Jesus, therefore, knowing all *the* things that were coming upon Him, went forward *and* said to them, 'Who are you seeking?' They answered Him, 'Jesus the Nazarean.' Jesus said to them, 'I AM.' **And Judas, who was betraying Him, was also standing with them.** But when He said to them, 'I AM,' they went backward and fell to *the* ground" (vs 1-6). I've often wondered what the soldiers thought when that took place.

Verse 7: "Then He asked them again, 'Who are you seeking?' And they said, 'Jesus the

Nazarean.’ Jesus answered, ‘I told you that I AM. Therefore, if you are seeking Me, allow these to go their way’” (vs 7-8).

Matthew 26:47: “And while He was yet speaking, Judas, one of the twelve, suddenly appeared, and with him a great crowd with swords and clubs, from the chief priests and elders of the people. Now, the **one who was betraying Him gave them a sign, saying, ‘Whomever I shall kiss, He is the One.** Arrest Him!’ And as soon as he came to Jesus, he said, ‘Hail, Rabbi,’ and earnestly **kissed Him.** But Jesus said to him, ‘Friend, for what *purpose* have you come?’ ....” (vs 47-50). Just like it was in Psa. 55, it’s a friend, a guide.

***Even His betrayal was prophesied!***

- Genesis 3
- John 6
- Revelation 5

Also referenced: Book: *Messianic Christology* by Arnold Fruchtenbaum

FRC: nfs  
Transcribed: 04-24-15  
Proofed: 4-26-15  
Corrected: 5-21-15

All Scripture from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter.

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) 2-Timothy 3:14-17
- 2) Psalm 16:7-11
- 3) Acts 2:23-32
- 4) Psalm 17:8-15
- 5) Psalm 22:1-3
- 6) Matthew 27:46
- 7) Psalm 22:6-8
- 8) Matthew 27:39-43
- 9) Psalm 22:9-17
- 10) Matthew 27:36-38
- 11) Luke 23:48-49
- 12) John 19:23-24
- 13) Psalm 22:18
- 14) Psalm 16:10
- 15) Psalm 22:19-23
- 16) Hebrews 2:8-13
- 17) Psalm 22:24-30
- 18) Genesis 15:5
- 19) Matthew 13:37-43
- 20) Psalm 22:30-31
- 21) John 19:28-30
- 22) Psalm 23:1-6
- 23) Psalm 24:7-10
- 24) Psalm 31:5
- 25) Luke 23:46
- 26) Psalm 38:10-11
- 27) Luke 23:49
- 28) Psalm 40:6-13
- 29) Hebrews 10:5-10
- 30) Psalm 45:6-7
- 31) Hebrews 1:6-9
- 32) Psalm 55:12-14, 20-21
- 33) Matthew 26:20-25
- 34) John 18:1-8
- 35) Matthew 26:47-50

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

## Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament X In the Psalms & Fulfillments in the New Testament #2

Fred R. Coulter

I think that the Psalms are really profound in the sense that what they do is they show even the thoughts of Christ and the personal things of Him like none of the prophecies do. For example: Isa. 53 reads that He was 'stricken,' He was 'smitten,' but His thoughts on that you find in Psa. 22, and how He felt.

Virtually all of the rest that I am going to cover in the Psalms, with the exception of Psa. 110, Arnold Fruchtenbaum did not cover in his book, *Messianic Christology*.

Psalms 56:1: "Be gracious unto me, O God..." We know that David is the one who is writing these things and actually singing them. We will see that the prophecies here are more than what apply to David.

"...for man would swallow me up; fighting all the day, he oppresses me" (v 1). David wasn't fighting every day. Were not the scribes, Sadducees, Pharisees and Herodians after Christ *all* the time, everyday?

Verse 2: "Those who lie in wait for me would trample me, for many are those who proudly fight against me. When I am afraid, I will trust in You. In God I will praise His Word; in God I have put my trust; I will not be afraid. What can flesh do to me? All day long they pervert my words... [twist and turn them] ...all their thoughts are against me for evil. They stir up strife; they hide themselves; they watch my steps as they wait for my soul" (vs 2-6). That's exactly what they were doing with Christ. You read that many, many times over in the Gospels.

Verse 7: "Because of iniquity cast them out. In Your anger cast down the people, O God. You number my wanderings, O put my tears into Your bottle; are they not in **Your book**?" (vs 7-8). That's a prophecy of the Gospels. They are in God's book, the Gospels, and the rest of the prophecies about Christ in the Old Testament.

Verse 9: "When I cry out to You, then my enemies will be turned back. This I know because God is for me. In God—I will praise His word; in the LORD—I will praise His word. **In God I have put my trust; I will not be afraid. What can man do to me?**" (vs 9-11). That carried Him right directly to and all the way through the crucifixion.

Psa. 69 is a tremendous prophecy of the sufferings of Christ and how He felt. We'll see that

there are quite a few things in here that we can cover.

Psalms 69:1: "Save me, O God..." Did Christ need to be saved? *Yes!* We'll see the fulfillment of that in Heb. 5, while this also refers back to the New Testament and Melchisedec.

Hebrews 5:7: "Who, in the days of His flesh, offered up both prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears to Him Who was able to save Him from death..."

Where Psa. 69 starts out "Save me, O God..." that's a prophecy of Christ. It can also refer to David but also a prophecy of Christ.

Hebrews 5:7 "...and was heard because *He* feared *God*. Although He was a Son, *yet, He learned obedience from the things that He suffered; and having been perfected...* [Jesus was not perfect until He went through the human experience, suffered death and was resurrected] ...He became *the* Author of eternal salvation to all those who obey Him" (vs 7-9).

This is almost like the words of His dying on the cross; Psalm 69:1 "Save me, O God for the waters have come in upon my soul! I sink in deep mire, where there is no standing; I have come into deep waters, where the floods overwhelm me. I am weary with my crying; my throat is parched; my eyes fail while I wait for my God" (vs 1-3).

Verse 4 is obviously referring to Christ: "Those who hate me without a cause..." So that it should be fulfilled that they hated Him without a cause.

"...are more than the hairs of my head; those who would cut me off are mighty being wrongfully my enemies. Should I restore what I did not take away? O God, You know my foolishness..." (vs 4-5). This is to David; Christ was not foolish, obviously. In many of these it talks about David, then the words flow into what it is to Christ, then back to David and then back to Christ again. That's all a part of 'precept upon precept; line upon line; here a little, there a little.'

"...and my sins are not hidden from You" (v 5). Christ became sin for us—didn't He? *Yes He did!* He took in His flesh 'the law of sin and death' so that He could pay for the sins of all humankind.

Verse 6: "Do not let those who wait on You, O Lord God of hosts, be ashamed because of me; let

not the ones who seek You be ashamed because of me, O God of Israel, because for Your sake I have borne reproach, shame has covered my face” (vs 6-7).

All referring to Christ, all referring to things that He was reproached on. That ties right back with Psa. 22 and all those that reproach Him: the priests, the Sadducees and all the people were standing out there saying, ‘If you be the Son of God, come down off the cross and save Yourself. You saved others. You can’t save yourself?’

Verse 8: “I have become a stranger to My brothers and an alien to My mother’s children.”

Mark 6:1: “And He left there and came into His *own* country, and His disciples followed Him. Now, when the Sabbath Day came, He began to teach in the synagogue; and many of *those* who heard Him were astonished, saying, ‘From where did this *Man* get these things? And what *is* this wisdom that has been given to Him, that by His hands many miracles are done also? Is this not the carpenter, the Son of Mary, and the brother of James and Joses and Judas and Simon?...’” (vs 1-3). He had four brothers.

God also wanted to live in a family because God is a family; it’s going to be a spiritual family. So, it’s fitting that Jesus was the firstborn and then there were other brothers and sisters.

“...And are not His sisters here with us?” And they were offended in Him” (vs 3)

Let’s see what His brothers thought about Him. Remember, they had to grow up with Him. You have to ask: I wonder what it was like growing up with Jesus?

John 7:1: “After these things, Jesus was sojourning in Galilee, for He did not desire to travel in Judea, because the Jews were seeking to kill Him.” They’re the enemies after Him.

Verse 2: “Now the Jews’ Feast of Tabernacles was near. For this reason, His brothers said to Him... [His own brothers, not the disciples] ...‘Leave this place and go into Judea, so that Your disciples... [Do you see the difference between disciples and brothers?] ...may see the works that You are doing; because no one does anything in secret, but seeks to be *seen* in public. If You do these things, reveal Yourself to the world.’ For neither did His brothers believe in Him” (vs 2-5). So, He was a stranger to His own brothers.

I imagine that if you think it was tough for the sons of Israel living with Joseph—remember their jealousy living with Joseph, especially after his dad gave him the coat of many colors, then his dreams—I wonder what it was like living with Jesus,

Who never sinned, Who never did anything wrong? Can you imagine how human nature, especially of kids growing up, would view that? *I imagine they told Him many times growing up, ‘Don’t You ever do anything wrong? You’re never in trouble like we are.’ You can almost hear it.*

I wonder if the brothers ever beat Him up when they were growing up? *It’s not recorded; we couldn’t say!* I don’t know what would happen. An angel might take care of the attacking brother pretty quickly, because there was not to be a broken bone in His body. I’m sure that He was kind and loving and understanding, and all of that sort of thing, but there is the enmity of human nature that can’t stand to be around someone who is perfect. What it does, it makes the human nature really be convicted. After all, human nature likes to pull everything down to the level of the individual who does the criticizing and complaining. That’s the whole purpose of it.

I wonder what it was like growing up with Jesus?” It’s a good thing that He was the first born instead of the last-born. Joseph was nearly the last-born; actually, Benjamin was really the last-born.

Verse 6: “Therefore, Jesus said to them, ‘My time has not yet come, but your time is always ready. The world cannot hate you; but it hates Me... [here is ‘the enemy is more than the hair of My head.] ...because I testify concerning it, that its works are evil’” (vs 6-7). In a way, He was kind of rebuking His brothers in a secondary fashion. He was saying that the world doesn’t hate *you*.

Verse 8: “You go up to this Feast. I am not going up to this Feast now, for My time has not yet been fulfilled.” We find out later that after His brothers had left then He went on up to the Feast secretly, which means that He wasn’t the kind of person that just to look at Him you would recognize Him.

There were other accounts in Luke where He was able to escape. How was He able to escape some of the things that He was going through and get out of their hands? The very first time that He stood in the synagogue and read Isa. 61 here’s the reaction that the people had in the synagogue. This is another reaction. There was a lot of hostility in that synagogue, where Jesus grew up.

Luke 4:21: “Then He began to say to them, ‘Today, this Scripture is being fulfilled in your ears.’ And all bore witness to Him and were amazed at the words of grace that were coming out of His mouth; and they said, ‘Is not this the son of Joseph?’” (vs 21-22).

There’s a difference here. We read in Mark 6, ‘Is this not Jesus Whose mother is Mary?’ Apparently between Luke 4 and Mark 6, Joseph

died. Joseph had to die somewhere along the line because when Jesus was on the cross He told John to take His mother into his house. Therefore, Joseph was already dead. The only way we can get a reference to that is the two different references here. One is, 'Is this not the son of Joseph?'

Verse 23: "And He said to them, 'Surely, you will say this parable to Me: "Physician, heal Yourself! Whatever we have heard being done in Capernaum, do also here in Your *own* country.'" But He said, 'Truly I say to you, no prophet is acceptable in his *own* country. For in truth...' vs 23-25). Carnal people don't like truth. You would think that people would want the truth—wouldn't you? *They don't! Why? Because it exposes their thoughts and their deeds as evil!*

"...I say to you, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heavens were shut up for three years and six months, and there was great famine upon all the land; and Elijah was not sent to any of them, but only to a widow in Sarepta, a city of Sidonia'" (vs 25-26). He was sent unto a Gentile, not unto an Israelite.

Verse 27: "There were also many lepers in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet... [a successor of Elijah] ...and none of them were cleansed, but only Naaman the Syrian"—who was a general of the army that was coming to conquer and carry away Israel.

When you start talking to the Jews this way, by telling them that all these Gentiles out here are more worthy than you, those are fighting words. If someone doesn't believe that, go to Jerusalem and say it, and you'll find how long you have to run down the street to avoid the stones. A lot of them carry Uzis because they're always on the spot. So, you might not get away with just a stoning.

Verse 29: "And they rose up *and* cast Him out of *the* city, and led Him to the edge of the mountain on which their city was built, in order to throw Him down headlong." Even the whole congregation was part of 'the enemies are more than the hairs of My head.'

Verse 30: "But He passed *safely* through their midst *and* departed."

- How was He able to do this when they had a hold of Him?
- Was He able to kind of change His appearance just a little bit so He didn't look like Himself?

*I don't know!* Anyway, He got away.

Verse 31: "Then He went down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the Sabbaths. And they were astonished at His teaching,

for His Word was with authority" (vs 31-32). This just shows that even the enemies were just part of the ones against Him, as well as His brothers didn't believe.

Psalms 69:9: "**For the zeal of Your house has eaten Me up**, and the reproaches of those who reproached You have fallen upon Me." That is a prophecy. We will see that Jesus did this twice. What Jesus did was so profound that this is what they convicted Him of at His illegal trial when they wanted to find something against Him.

John 2:12: "After this He went down to Capernaum, He and His mother and His brothers and His disciples... [His brothers were following with Him] ...and they remained there not many days. Now the Passover of the Jews was near, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. And He found in the temple those who were selling oxen and sheep and doves, and the money exchangers sitting *there*; and after making a scourge of cords, **He drove them all out of the temple, with both the sheep and the oxen; and He poured out the coins of the money exchangers...**" (vs 12-15).

This could be kind of a wild mess because when you get animals scared and things like that it tends to make things not too clean roundabout. I imagine some of their money landed in some of that not clean roundabout, which landed on the ground, which was fitting for them.

"...and overturned the tables" (v15). *You talk about gall!* If you look at it just from the perspective of the priests and the Pharisees: *How dare* anyone come into the temple of God! *How dare* He do anything to these people who are there to serve and to exchange money so they could buy the offering to offer unto God! This is really quite a thing just to come a bolt out of the blue, walk up to the temple and start doing all of that.

Verse 16: "**And to those who were selling the doves, He said, 'Take these things out of here! Do not make My Father's house a house of merchandise.'**" What they were doing with their exchanging of money, just like they always do, they discount the exchange so that they get more for the foreign money so that they can resell it and make even more money. You couldn't buy a sacrifice with a silver coin from Persia or silver coins from Rome or any other province. They had to bring it up, exchange it, get the temple coin and then buy the sacrifice. So, they would discount it and give them less of the temple coins than they should have and merchandising them.

Verse 17: "Then His disciples remembered that it was written... [here's the quote from Psa. 69]: ...**'The zeal of Your house has eaten Me up.'**"

Verse 18: “As a result, the Jews answered and said to Him, ‘What sign do You show to us, seeing that You do these things?’” It’s interesting that they didn’t come and arrest Him right there. Why did they not arrest Him? Just like it said at another time that they came after Him to arrest Him but they couldn’t get Him, because it was not His time. Do you think that if it would have been anyone other than Jesus who did that, that they would have had him surrounded, bound, chained and ready to be hauled up to the Sanhedrin? So, it’s quite interesting that they said, ‘What sign do you show us, seeing that You do these things?’

Verse 19: “Jesus answered and said to them, ‘Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.’” That’s what they convicted Him on. Anyone who says that he’s going to destroy the temple—the temple of God, the place where He placed His name—you don’t realize that the only One Who says He can destroy it is God, because He’ll be the One Who makes the decision. This also affirms that He was God in the flesh.

Verse 20: “Then the Jews said, ‘This temple was forty-six years in building, and You will raise it up in three days?’ But He spoke concerning the temple of His body. Therefore, when He was raised from the dead, His disciples remembered that He had said this to them; and they believed the Scriptures, and the word that Jesus had spoken” (vs 20-22).

Let’s see where He did it again, right at the end of His ministry. He did it at the beginning of the ministry and at the end of the ministry. This was done deliberately to provoke the religious leaders, as a sign and witness against them. The second time He did it was so that they would be more incensed than ever before and that He would provoke them to the cause of arresting Him. He knew that He would be delivered into the hands of the chief priests, the elders and so forth. He told the disciples that many times.

Mark 11:15: “Then they came into Jerusalem; and after entering the temple, Jesus began to cast out those who were buying and selling in the temple; and He overthrew the tables of the money exchangers and the seats of those who were selling doves.” I imagine that was noisy. Start chasing around the oxen, the calves, the goats and the doves flying everywhere, that must have really been something.

Verse 16: “Moreover, He did not allow anyone to carry a vessel through the temple.” He was acting like He owned the place, *which He did!*

Verse 17: “And He taught, saying to them, ‘Is it not written, “My house shall be called a house

of prayer for all nations?” But you have made it a den of robbers.’ Now, the chief priests and the scribes heard *this*, and they sought how they might destroy Him; for they feared Him, because all the multitudes marveled at His teaching” (vs 17-18). He did this deliberately to provoke the enemies.

Psalm 69:14: “Deliver me out of the mire, and let me not sink; let me be delivered from those who hate me and out of the deep waters.... [kind of an allusion to His death] ...Do not let the flood of waters overflow me, nor let the deep swallow me up, and let not the pit... [grave] ...shut its mouth upon me. Answer me, O LORD, for Your steadfast love is good; turn unto me according to the multitude of Your tender mercies. And hide not Your face from Your servant, for I am in trouble; answer me speedily. Draw near unto my soul and redeem it... [which He did] ...deliver me because of my enemies.... [which He did] ...You have known my reproach, and my shame, and my dishonor; my enemies are all before You” (vs 14-19).

Verse 20 is a key; this is where some of the Protestants say that Jesus died of a broken heart. Jesus did not die of a broken heart. Jesus experienced having His heart—mentally—broken.

Verse 20: “**Reproach has broken my heart...**” That’s why He said when He was on the cross as recorded in Psa. 22, ‘My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?’ When you go back and you remember the prophecies that we covered, how that as a boy, as a youth, He was taught every morning by the Father. He was awakened every morning early and taught. Here God leaves Him all alone. That’s why He had a broken heart. That was before the spear was thrust into His side and probably into His heart.

“...and I am full of heaviness; and I looked for sympathy, but there was none; and for comforters, but I found none. They also gave Me gall for My food; and in My thirst they gave Me vinegar to drink” (vs 20-21).

Matthew 26:55: “At that point Jesus said to the crowd, ‘Have you come out to take Me with swords and clubs, as against a robber? I sat day after day with you, teaching in the temple, and you did not arrest Me. But all this has happened so that the Scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled.’ Then all the disciples forsook Him and fled” (vs 55-56). There’s a double part of it there.

This is part of the reproach that He suffered. Verse 66: “‘What do you think?’ They answered *and* said, ‘He is deserving of death!’ Then they spit in His face and hit Him with their fists; and some struck *Him* with rods, saying, ‘Prophecy to us, Christ. Who is the one that struck You?’” (vs 66-68).

Matthew 27:46: “And about the ninth hour, Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, ‘Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?’ That is, ‘My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?’ And some of those who were standing there heard *and* said, ‘This *one* is calling for Elijah.’ And immediately one of them ran and, taking a sponge, filled *it* with vinegar and put *it* on a stick, *and gave it to Him to drink*” (vs 46-48). That fulfills the prophecy that they gave Him vinegar to drink.

Psalms 69:22: “Let their table become a snare before them...” You can tie that right back into Psalms 23, that the table was prepared for Christ in the presence of His enemy and their table became a snare unto them.

Verse 23: “Let their eyes be darkened, so that they do not see; and make their loins shake without ceasing. Pour out Your indignation upon them, and let the fierceness of anger take hold of them.... [all of this happened with the destruction of Jerusalem] ...Let their encampment be desolate; let none dwell in their tents, for they persecute him whom You have stricken, and they recount the grief of those You have wounded. Add iniquity unto their iniquity, and let them not come into Your righteousness. Let them be blotted out of the Book of Life and not be written with the righteous” (vs 23-28). *That’s quite something!*

They were the ones who did it. Jesus warned them of the unpardonable sin in Matt. 12. That’s when they accused Him of casting demons out by Beelzebub.

Matthew 12:31: “‘Because of this, I say to you, every sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven to men **except** the blasphemy against the *Holy Spirit*... [which comes from God the Father] ...*that* shall not be forgiven to men. And whoever speaks a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; **but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this age nor in the coming age**’” (vs 31-32).

We see the prophecy of it in Psalms 69. There’s another Scripture which says that Jesus said, ‘Every plant that My Father has not planted shall be rooted up.’ That’s what happened with the religious leaders in Jesus’ time.

Psalms 69:28: “**Let them be blotted out of the Book of Life and not be written with the righteous.**” That’s quite a prayer. That I can only refer to Christ praying to the Father, if they don’t repent. It cannot refer to David doing this, because when Moses asked God to blot his name out of the Book of Life, God says, ‘No, I won’t do it.’

When Moses asked to have his name stricken that the children of Israel might live, let’s see what God answered him:

Exodus 32:30: “And it came to pass on the next day, Moses said to the people, ‘You have sinned a great sin. And now I will go up to the LORD. Perhaps I shall make an atonement for your sin.’ And Moses returned to the LORD, and said, ‘Oh, these people have sinned a great sin, and have made themselves gods of gold! And now if You would only forgive their sin! **And if not, I pray You, blot me out of Your book which You have written.**’...[the Book of Life] ...And the LORD said to Moses, ‘**Whoever has sinned against Me, I will blot him out of My book.** And now go, lead the people to the *place* of which I have spoken to you. Behold, My angel shall go before you. And in the day of My visitation I will visit their sin upon them.’ And the LORD plagued the people because they made the calf, **which Aaron made**” (vs 30-35). It really shows here that they both are responsible, because “...they made the calf **which Aaron made**,” showing double responsibility there.

Psalms 69:28 “**Let them be blotted out of the Book of Life**... [only Christ could ask that] ...and not be written with the righteous. But I am poor and sorrowful; let Your salvation, O God, set me up on high. I will praise the name of God with a song and will magnify Him with thanksgiving” (vs 28-30). Then it blends back into David except for the last verse:

Verse 36: “And the seed of His servants shall inherit it... [referring to Christ] ...and those who love His name... [those called to salvation] ...shall dwell in it.” That has reference to New Jerusalem.

Psalms 109:26: “Help me, O LORD my God; save me according to Your steadfast love; so that they may know that this is *of* Your hand; that You, LORD, have done it” (vs 26-27). That can refer to the whole thing concerning the life of Christ, His crucifixion and His resurrection.

Verse 28: “They will curse, but You will bless; when they arise, let them be ashamed; but let Your servant rejoice. Let my accusers be clothed with confusion, and let them wrap themselves in their own shame, as with a cloak” (vs 28-29). That’s exactly what happened. They were confused.

Verse 30: “I will greatly praise the LORD with my mouth; yea, I will praise Him among the multitude, for He shall stand at the right hand of the poor, to save him from those who condemn his soul” (vs 30-32).

Let's see where we have some fulfillment of this: "...Let my accusers be clothed with confusion..." That's what happened. We'll see something of the confusion that they had after the resurrection. Here's where the confusion began:

Matthew 27:62: "Now in the next day..." Picture the scribes, the Pharisees, the Sadducees and all the religious leaders:

- they finally got their man
- He finally died
- He was put in the grave
- they had now rid themselves of their enemy
- they had gotten rid of the One Who they had been striving to get rid of for 3½ years and couldn't get Him

Now they wanted to make sure that what they did was going to stick.

Verse 62: "Now, on the next day, which followed the preparation *day*, the chief priests and the Pharisees came together to Pilate, saying, 'Sir, we remember that that deceiver said while *He was* living, "After three days I *will* rise"' (vs 62-63).

- Did they understand what He said?
- Did they know that He would be raised back to life?
- *They knew, but they didn't believe it!*

Verse 64: "Therefore, command *that* the sepulcher be secured until the third day; lest His disciples come by night and steal Him away, and say to the people, 'He is risen from the dead'; and the last deception shall be worse than the first." Pilate had enough of this already so he said *yes*.

Verse 65: "Then Pilate said to them, 'You have a guard. Go, make *it as* secure as you know *how*.' And they went *and* made the sepulcher secure, sealing the stone *and* setting the guard" (vs 65-66).

They were totally confused. The confusion was heaped on in Acts 2-7, terminating in the death of Stephen. They couldn't stand it by that time and were persecuting the Christians and drove them all out. Here's where it started.

Matthew 28:11: "And as they were going, behold, some of the guard went into the city... [the soldiers] ...*and* reported to the chief priests all the things that were done. Then, after gathering together with the elders and taking counsel, they gave a large sum of money to the soldiers, saying, 'Tell *everyone* that His disciples came by night and stole Him while you were sleeping'" (vs 11-13). The very thing that they said they were afraid of, they said to use it as an excuse.

Verse 14: "And if the governor hears *of* this, we will persuade him to release you from responsibility." They would take more money and pay the governor. You can't hide the fact that He was raised from the dead. No amount of money is going to change that.

Verse 15: "And they took the money *and* did as they were instructed; and this report has been spread abroad among the Jews to this day"—which was a record when Matthew wrote it and a prophecy clear down to our time.

Larry King Live had two rabbis, a Protestant minister and a Baptist minister and they were arguing back and forth. The Baptist set out as a mission to try and convert Jews and the Jews were all mad about the fact that they were trying to convert them. *That was something to watch!*

If you think that I'm fierce looking, they had a rabbi on there that would scare you to death. His eyes were deeper set than mine and more fiery than mine. He had glasses, bushy black hair and a bushy black beard. I just could see in him as one of the descendants of the Sanhedrin rejecting Christ!

(go to the next track)

The one thing that they said was, 'We all know the disciples stole the body and created this myth of Christ.' There it is, a prophecy unto this day.

Psalms 110:1: "The LORD said unto my Lord, 'Sit at My right hand until I make Your enemies as Your footstool.'" When I read that, I said—I used the term Yahweh at that time but it should be Jehovah—"Yahweh said unto My Yahweh," or that it should read, 'Jehovah said unto My Jehovah.' I did not know it at the time, but that's actually what it says in the true Levitical Masoretic text.

The Jews claim that the first one is YHVH, or Jehovah, and the second one is Adonai, but the Hebrew text is *exactly* the same word spelled *exactly* the same way: Y-H-V-H. The vowel pointing in the Levitical text shows that it is, Jehovah/Jehovah. Whereas, in the Rabbinic text—which is not the Masoretic text—it shows Jehovah/Adonai. This is quite a profound verse here.

We can look at it this way: Who was David's Lord? *The God of the Old Testament!* When David says, 'The LORD said unto My Lord...' then this is actually a revelation that there were two God Beings and the One Who became the Father is the first LORD. The second LORD is the One Who is the LORD of the Old Testament. Notice, this is also a prophecy of Jesus: "...Sit at My right hand until I

make Your enemies as Your footstool.” Let’s look at some of the prophecies where this has been fulfilled:

1-Corinthians 15:24: “Afterwards the end comes...[ refers to Rev. 21-22] ...when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to Him Who is God and Father, when He shall have put an end to all rule and all authority and power. For it is ordained that He reign until He has put all enemies under His feet” (vs 24-25). There’s the reiteration of the prophecy of Psalms 110.

Verse 26: “*The last enemy to be destroyed is death. For He has put all things in subjection under His feet. But when it is said that all things have been put in subjection, it is clearly evident that it does not include Him [God the Father] Who put all things in subjection under Him. But when He has put all things in subjection to Him, then shall the Son Himself also be subject to Him [God the Father] Who put all things in subjection to Him, so that God may be all in all*” (vs 26-28). Paul shows the fulfillment of that.

Psalms 110:2: “The LORD shall send the rod of Your strength out of Zion *saying*, ‘Rule in the midst of Your enemies.’ Your people will offer themselves in the day of Your power, in the beauties of Holiness from the womb of the morning: Yours is the dew of Your youth. The LORD has sworn and will not repent, ‘**You are a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek**’” (vs 2-4). We know that that refers to Christ.

Let’s see where Paul says that this was fulfilled. There are some who believe that Melchizedek was Shem the son of Noah.. We will show in the New Testament that it refers to Christ.

Hebrews 5:1: “For every high priest, being taken from among men to act in behalf of men, is appointed to serve in *the* things pertaining to God in order that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins; *and* he is able to deal gently with those who sin in ignorance and those who have been led astray, since he himself is also encumbered with many weaknesses.: And because of these *weaknesses*, he is obligated also to offer *sacrifices* for his own sins, exactly as *he does* for the people” (vs 1-3). We see that on the Day of Atonement where the priest had to offer sins for himself, and if he committed any sins going along the way he had to offer the offering for the priest.

Verse 4: “Now no man takes the honor *of the high priesthood* upon himself, but *only* he who is called by God, in the same way as Aaron also was *called*. In this same manner also... [exactly in the same way] ...Christ did not glorify Himself to become a High Priest, but He Who said to Him, ‘You are My Son; today I have begotten You.’.... [ties in with Psalms 2] ...Even as He also says in

another *place*, ‘**You are a Priest forever according to the order of Melchizedek**’” (vs 4-6). This is showing that that was fulfilled in Christ and prophesied (Psalms 110).

Let’s see how this ties in with the promises that God gave to Abraham; Hebrews 6:13: “For God, after promising Abraham, swore by Himself, since He could swear by none greater.” That’s quite a thing for God to swear by Himself, because whenever He says something it’s always true. Whenever He speaks something it will be.

Verse 14: “Saying, ‘Surely in blessing I will bless you, and in multiplying I will multiply you.’ Now, after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise. For indeed, men swear by the greater, and confirmation by an oath *puts* an end to all disputes between them. In this *way* God, desiring more abundantly to show the heirs of the promise the unchangeable nature of His own purpose, confirmed *it* by an oath; so that by two immutable things, in which *it was* impossible *for* God to lie...” (vs 14-18). God did this for our benefit so that we can read in the Scriptures:

- that God is so great
- that God is eternal
- that God is glorious
- that God is righteous

He established the covenant with Abraham and confirmed it with an oath and swore it by His existence. That makes something so sure. You can believe everything that God has said based upon that one statement to Abraham. *He proves it right here!*

“...we... [done for *our* benefit, for Abraham’s benefit; for all the believers] ...who have fled for refuge might have strong encouragement to lay hold on the hope *that has been* set before us” (vs 18). Hope without God behind it can be an empty hope. Abraham had hope, and it got down to the point that it was so bleak that he only hoped in hope. This gives us hope. *A sure hope!* Not: I hope it will happen, maybe, if everything works out. *No! We have:*

- the hope of the resurrection
- the hope of the forgiveness of our sins
- the hope of conversion
- the hope of everything that God gives us

When we get down in the Passover time and we start tying this in with the Passover, it is really fantastic what God has done, brethren. *It is really amazing!*

Verse 19: “Which *hope* we have as an anchor of the soul...” So that:

- nothing can *discourage* us
- nothing can *turn us back*
- nothing can *take us from God*

That's something to really understand. God has called each one of us individually. Which is profound in itself—isn't it? *Yes, it is!*

"...both secure and steadfast... [It's going to happen and never be moved] ...and which enters into the *sanctuary* within the veil; where Jesus has entered for us *as* a forerunner, **having become a High Priest forever according to the order of Melchisedec**" (vs 19-20).

Showing that through the priesthood of Jesus Christ we have direct access to God the Father in heaven above. That's something that we need to reiterate over and over again. ***No man is between you and God the Father except the Man Jesus Christ***, resurrected from the dead as the High Priest after the order of Melchisedec forever. That access is as close as your knees are to the floor, the words in your mouth and the flow of your heart and emotions to God. *Direct access!*

Hebrews 10:19: "Therefore, brethren, having confidence to enter into the *true* Holiest by the blood of Jesus." Paul was really writing a profound and deep epistle to those Jews back in Jerusalem who were giving up on Christ. That's why it was so profound on the nature of Christ:

- what He did
- how He did it
- what this gives them as compared to the temple

They were probably going back to the animal sacrifice of the lamb for the Passover and giving up on the Passover of Christ:

- just because things didn't work out the way that they figured
- just because Christ didn't return in the time that they thought

Verse 19: "Therefore, brethren, having confidence to enter into the *true* Holiest by the blood of Jesus. By **a new and living way**..." (vs 19-20).

- not an old and dead way
- not through coming to a priest that is on the earth
- not through coming to a temple that's on the earth
- not waiting for the priest on the Day of Atonement to go into the Holy of Holies

—but "...a new and living way... [which is effective every day] ...which He consecrated for us... [not for Himself] ...through the veil (that is, His flesh), and *having* a great High Priest over the house of God... [Christ Who is a Priest after the order of Melchisedec forever] ...let us approach *God* with a true heart, with full conviction of faith, our hearts

having been purified from a wicked conscience, and our bodies having been washed with pure water. Let us hold fast without wavering *to* the hope *that* we profess, for He Who promised *is* faithful" (vs 20-23). That's the kind of hope that we need to have. That comes through the priesthood of Melchisedec.

Psalm 118:18: "The LORD has sorely chastened me..." I imagine that's how Jesus felt when He was going through the beating and scourging.

"...but He has not given me over to death.... [No! He raised Him from the dead.] ...Open to me the gates of righteousness... [that's probably Christ when He ascended into heaven] ...I will go through them, and I will praise the LORD. This is the gate of the LORD; the righteous shall enter through it" (vs 18-20). We will go, too. Christ was the forerunner for us, meaning that we will follow in the resurrection, after Him.

Verse 21: "I will praise You, for You have answered me and have become my salvation. **The Stone, which the builders rejected, has become the Head Stone of the corner**" (vs 21-22). This does not mean the 'capstone.'

The capstone of a pyramid is the occult, according to *The New World Religion: The Spiritual Roots of Global Government* by Gary H. Kah shows a pyramid with the capstone coming down in place; not yet in place, but there is the 'all-seeing eye' as represented by the sun shining through the space between the capstone and the top of the pyramid. Christ is not a capstone, but "...the Head Stone of the corner."

The way they started building buildings was that they would get the head cornerstone and make it absolutely true on all of the sides. You have six sides; from that, everything else was built. If you have the angle absolutely true on this side and absolutely true on the other side, then you can build the building with the square angles that you need. Otherwise your going to be off at the corners, and when you build up, if you don't have it exactly completely smooth and level to begin building the other stones upon, you're going to have the stones getting out of alignment.

That's why it's likened unto the "...Head Stone of the corner" or the Chief Cornerstone. The Church being built upon Christ is going to be built into a *glorious* temple. It has to start with Christ Who is the First of the firstfruits.

Verse 23: "This is the LORD'S doing; it is marvelous in our eyes." Let's see where this all fits into prophecy. Even Isaiah made a reference of it. Then we'll see that the apostles made the reference

to it. and Jesus even told the religious leaders the same thing.

Isaiah 28:16: “Therefore, thus says the Lord GOD, “Behold, I place in Zion a Stone for a **foundation**... [not a capstone] ...a tried Stone, a precious Cornerstone, a sure Foundation; he who believes shall not be ashamed.””

In 1-Cor. it does not talk about ‘the Stone’; it talks about ‘the Foundation.’ He is the ‘Foundation Stone.’ This is why, brethren, everything we do has got to:

- be based on the Word of God
  - be based on Jesus Christ
- and as Paul says:
- take heed how we build

There’s no other foundation that we can have other than Christ.

1-Corinthians 3:11: “**For no one is able to lay any other foundation besides that which has been laid, which is Jesus Christ.**” That’s why it talks about the Stone *and* the Foundation (Isa. 28).

Verse 12: “Now if anyone builds upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay or stubble...” It’s very important what we’re building. *We* have to build on it.

Once we’re on this Foundational Stone then, with Christ in us, if we yield to God we can develop the very character of Christ. If we just want to *borrow* Christ’s name and kind of go along to get along and allow sin to go, maybe we’re going to build wood, hay and stubble and that’s all going to be burned up. Perhaps we will be saved in the end, but we have to be careful. That’s why it’s very important that on this ‘sure Foundation’ we build, we build correctly and we build what God wants us to build with the character and Spirit of God.

Luke 20:17: “But He looked at them *and* said, ‘What then is this that is written: “**The Stone that the builders rejected, this one has become the head of the corner?**” Everyone who falls on that Stone shall be broken... [repentance] ...**but on whomever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.**”’ And the chief priests and the scribes sought to lay hands on Him in that hour, because they knew that He had spoken this parable against them; but they feared the people” (vs 17-19).

Let’s see where there is reference to this Stone. This time it is likened unto a hammer. It is the Word of God and Christ was the Word of God.

Jeremiah 23:29: “**“Is not My Word like a fire?”**... [likened unto a sharp two-edged, sword (Heb. 4)] ...says the LORD, ‘**and like a hammer**

**that breaks the rock in pieces?”**’ That’s what He was referring to when they perceived it was them.

Let’s come to Isa. and see that it is showing that this was a prophecy of what would happen if that Stone came down upon them, and it did.

Isaiah 60:12: “For the nation and kingdom that will not serve you will perish. Yes, *those* nations will be **completely wasted.**” When you go back and you look at what happened to Jerusalem and the Jews in 70<sub>A.D.</sub> on up to 135<sub>A.D.</sub> and even down to this day. *It did! It wasted them, totally!*

Let’s see that it is the Stone cut out without hands; all referring to Christ; Daniel 2:44: ““And in the days of these kings... [we’re getting closer to that time than ever before] ...the God of heaven shall set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed. And the kingdom shall not be left to other people... [it will be given to the saints] ...but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever. **Because you** [King Nebuchadnezzar] **saw that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands...**” (vs 44-45). That’s why it is a Cornerstone sure, true, because God has cut it.

“...and that it broke in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold, the great God has made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter. And the dream *is* certain, and its interpretation is sure” (vs 45). When you start reading all of the things in the Bible where the dogmatic statements have been made that this is going to happen over and over again.

Paul Harvey said, ‘If I were Satan I would have people treat the Bible as a myth and reject it as not relevant,’ because when you really get into the Bible:

- it is powerful
- it is relevant
- it is applicable all the time
  - ✓ through all ages
  - ✓ through all civilizations
  - ✓ to all men

The witness of Christ with all the prophecies concerning Him are just astounding. When you go back and read these things:

- What happened to Babylon? *Just like God said!*
- What happened to Persia? *Just like God said!*
- What happened to Greece? *Just like God said!*
- What happened to happened to the extensions of that down through Europe? *Just like God said!*

In the end-time it's going to be just like God said and when Christ returns, He is going to grind it to powder, **because He is that Stone!**

Psalms 132:16—showing that it is the time of the resurrection: “I also will clothe her priests with salvation, and her saints shall shout aloud for joy. There I will make the horn of David to bud...” (vs 16-17). This is referring to Christ Who would take over the throne of David. Today the question is: Where is the throne of David? The Jews don't have a king and they don't have the throne of David.

I think if you follow through some of the writings—that many men have done concerning where the ten lost tribes are—that the throne, which used to be in Jerusalem, is now in London. That's where the Queen of England now sits.

Let's see how Isa. talks about the One Who would be the son of Jesse and would be just like a 'bud.' When the king was carried off into captivity into Babylon, then Jeremiah took the daughters of the king.

- Why would Jeremiah end up with the daughters of the king?
- Why would they escape and not the king and the king's sons unless God had a specific purpose for the daughters?

That is to heal the breach that was made in the birth of Pharez and Zarah. Zarah put his hand out first and the midwife put a scarlet ribbon on it to signify that Zarah was first, but the hand was pulled back and Pharez was born first. So, he got the kingship.

Pharez means *breach*, because there was a breach of the firstborn because Zarah with his hand out first was actually the firstborn, but not the first one out. God designed it that way so that at the time when the Jews would go into captivity into Babylon the throne would then be removed, taken over to Ireland, Scotland and down to where we have it in England today.

There are many books out concerning that. It was not just a doctrine of Herbert Armstrong. It's been around for many, many years. You need to understand that.

Isaiah 11:1: “And there shall come forth a shoot out from the stump of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots.” This is showing that Christ would come out of where the kingship had been terminated and cut off. In other words, it's a stump. You've seen how a shoot comes out where a tree has been cut and the stump is left? This is referring to Christ. The kingship there in Jerusalem had been eliminated totally.

When you read Psalms 89 you find that Ethan, the Ezrahite—the one who came back with Ezra—

wrote it. He said, ‘God you said that there would always be someone sitting on Your throne, the throne of David, as:

- the moon is before Me
- the sun is before Me
- the stars are before Me

The lament is: that ‘we're here, where's the king?’ They didn't have a king, because the kingship had been removed over to the ten tribes, away from Judah. There is a branch of Jews of Zarah, who then are the royal family. That's how God fulfilled it.

Psalms 140 has to do with the enemies against Christ continually. When you go back and study the life of David, there were enemies against him, beginning with Saul. After he came into the kingship, he was the one who was going out and destroying all the enemy. He was killing the Philistines, the Amorites and the Moabites and so forth. He didn't have that many enemies against Him **until** he committed the sin with Bathsheba. Then his whole household was against him and the whole kingdom was in turmoil from that time, but not enemies listed like it is here:

Psalms 140:1: “Deliver me, O LORD, from the evil man; keep me from the violent man, those who devise evil things in their hearts; together they always stir up wars.... [spiritual warfare and referring to Christ] ...They have sharpened their tongues like a serpent; the poison of a viper is under their lips. Selah. O LORD, keep me from the hands of the wicked; preserve me from the violent man who purposed to overthrow my steps. The proud have hidden a snare and a trap for me; they have spread a net by the wayside; they have set traps for me. Selah” (vs 1-5).

Psalms 142 refers back to Heb. 5 when He cried out to Him Who was able to save Him from death: Psalms 142:1: “I cried to the LORD with my voice; with my voice did I make my supplication unto the LORD. I poured out my complaint before Him; I declared my trouble before Him” (vs 1-2). Here's a good clue for us. What do you do when you're in trouble and have difficulties and problems? *You continually go to God!* God promises that He will deliver you out of *all your troubles. That's a promise!*

Whatever your troubles are, go to God He'll deliver you. Sometimes when you pray that prayer, it'll get worse at first. Why? *That's to see if you are going to continually trust in Him!* God is not there like with the snap of the finger, ‘Oh, do this for me.’ and it's done. He wants to know:

- Do you believe?
- Do you have faith?
- *Then when He delivers, it's magnificent!*

I talked to a man who was living in Pasadena. He had to get out of there. It was the traffic, the crime, the smog, and, of course, the disintegration of the Church. It was so bad that he said, 'O God, help me get out of here!' It kept getting worse and worse. He kept crying out to God and beseeching Him.

He finally got out. He came up here near Mariposa, California. Someone told him that there was someone who needs someone to live on this ranch and watch it while these people travel, because they're very rich people and they're gone all the time. Now he lives on a mountaintop with a 200-acre ranch. He doesn't have to do any work but to care for it. He's getting him a golf cart so he can go around wherever he goes. He has fresh air, no traffic, no smog, no crime and he has free rent! God delivered him from his enemies and helped him, just like this. Did God deliver Christ from all His enemies? *Yes, sure did!*

Verse 3: "When my spirit fainted within me, then You knew my path...." You've come to the point that it's overwhelming. Why does God allow you to do that? Get to that point? *So that you'll trust Him!* If it's more than you can do, then you know God has got to do it. That's what it was with Christ.

"...In the way in which I walked they have secretly laid a snare for me. Look to the right and see, no one is concerned for me; I have no way to flee; no man cares for my life.... [they all ran off] ...I cried to You, O LORD; I said, 'You are my refuge and my portion in the land of the living.' Hear my cry, for I am brought very low... [none was brought lower than Christ] ...deliver me from my persecutors, for they are stronger than I.... [God is stronger than all] ...Bring my soul out of prison... [he wasn't in prison but it is in reference to the grave] ...that I may praise Your name; the righteous shall gather around me, for You shall deal bountifully with me'" (vs 3-7)—referring to receiving eternal life.

Referring to the name of God, Proverbs 30:4: "Who has gone up to heaven and has come down?.... [only Christ] ...Who has gathered the wind in His fists?.... [Christ created it] ...Who has bound the waters in His garments? Who has established all the ends of the earth? What *is* His name, and what *is* His Son's name, if you know?"

His name is *God the Father* and His Son's name is *Jesus Christ*. It has to refer to God; ***no man could have done that!***

All Scripture from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter.

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) Psalm 56:1-11
- 2) Psalm 69:1
- 3) Hebrews 5:7
- 4) Psalm 69:1
- 5) Hebrews 5:7-9
- 6) Psalm 69:1-8
- 7) Mark 6:1-3
- 8) John 7:1-8
- 9) Luke 4:21-27, 29-32
- 10) Psalm 69:9
- 11) John 2:12-22
- 12) Mark 11:15-18
- 13) Psalm 69:14-21
- 14) Matthew 26:55-56, 66-68
- 15) Matthew 27:46-48
- 16) Psalm 69:22-28
- 17) Matthew 12:31-32
- 18) Psalm 69:28
- 19) Exodus 32:30-35
- 20) Psalm 69:28-30, 36
- 21) Psalm 109:26-32
- 22) Matthew 27:62-66
- 23) Matthew 28:11-15
- 24) Psalm 110:1
- 25) 1-Corinthians 15:24-28
- 26) Psalm 110:2-4
- 27) Hebrews 5:1-6
- 28) Hebrews 6:13-20
- 29) Hebrews 10:19-23
- 30) Psalm 118:18-23
- 31) Isaiah 28:16
- 32) 1-Corinthians 3:11-12
- 33) Luke 20:17-19
- 34) Jeremiah 23:29
- 35) Isaiah 60:12
- 36) Daniel 2:44-45
- 37) Psalm 132:16-17
- 38) Isaiah 11:1
- 39) Psalm 140:1-5
- 40) Psalm 142:1-7
- 41) Proverbs 30:4

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Isaiah 53
- Psalm 22:8
- Isaiah 61
- Psalm 23
- Acts 2-7
- Revelation 21-22
- Psalm 2
- Hebrew 4
- Psalm 89

#### Also referenced:

##### Books:

- *Messianic Christology* by Arnold Fruchtenbaum
- *The New World Religion: The Spiritual Roots of Global Government* by Gary H. Kah

FRC:nfs

Transcribed: 05-05-15

Proofed: bo—5-11-15

## Prophecies of Jesus and the Law Psalms 119

Fred R. Coulter

How do we know what Jesus thought of and how He viewed the Scriptures of God, or the Law? Almost every Christian-professing denomination in the world—yes, even some of the Churches of God—believed that Christ came and did away with the Law.

We all know the Scriptures that say, ‘*Think not that I’ve come to destroy the Law or the Prophets; I came not to destroy but fulfill.*’ We also know that Jesus said that you should ‘love the Lord your God with all your heart, mind, soul and being.’ That tells you something very much. It is an all out effort between you and God. God gave an all-out effort with Jesus Christ, so you give an all-out effort for God. But He motivates you and supplies all your needs that way.

He also said that to love God that way is ‘more than all burnt offerings’—all sacrifices—worth more than all of that. How are we to understand—I think we can understand part of it in Psa 119—how Christ thought of the laws, commandments, statutes and judgments of God?

Heb. 10 sort of summarizes everything I’ve covered up to this point, but let’s take it one step further:

Hebrews 10:1: “For the *priestly* law, having *only* a shadow of the good things that are coming, *and* not the image of those things, with the same sacrifices, which they offer continually year by year, is never able to make perfect those who come *to worship*. Otherwise, would they not have ceased to be offered?...” (vs 1-2). In other words, if there was one perfect animal sacrifice to take care of everything, then that would do it. That’s what Paul is saying, ***but there wasn’t!***

“...For once those who worship had been purified, *they would* no longer be conscious of sin. On the contrary, in *offering* these *sacrifices* year by year, *there is* a remembrance of sins because *it is* impossible *for the* blood of bulls and goats to take away sins. For this reason, when He comes into the world, He says, ‘Sacrifice and offering You did not desire, but You have prepared a body for Me’” (vs 1-5). That’s talking about Christ, His physical body. It also projects forward to the Body of Christ, the Church.

Verse 6: “‘You did not delight in burnt offerings and *sacrifices* for sin. Then said I, ‘Lo, I come (*as it is written of Me in the scroll of the book*)

to do Your will, O God.’” (vs 6-7). That’s the whole key, *the will of God*; it covers all the conditions: Old Testament and New Testament.

You can think of many other Scriptures. What did Jesus say about all of those who had all kinds of ‘religious works’? Using the name of Jesus they cast out demons, healed the sick and did many wonderful works. But they did not do the *will of the Father*, and Jesus said, ‘I don’t know you.’ That’s why Christ came, ***to do the Father’s will!***

Verse 8: “In the saying above, *He said*, ‘Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and *sacrifices* for sin (which are offered according to the *priestly* law) You did not desire nor delight in’; Then He said, ‘Lo, I come to do Your will, O God.’....” (vs 8-9). I think it’s really important when He repeats it so closely, one right after the other.

“...He takes away the first *covenant* in order that He may establish the second *covenant*; by Whose will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. Now, every high priest stands ministering day by day, offering the same sacrifices repeatedly...” (vs 9-11).

Talk about a repetitious boring job: here’s another goat; here’s another lamb. Can you imagine all the blood, guts and gore, and splashing the blood, the roasting, the incense and heaving and waving? That’s not very spiritual; you don’t have much time to think on anything—do you? ***NO!*** So, it was futile! Often times the same sacrifices can never take away sins. All of that didn’t take away the sins. It forgave it for the temple, but it never removed it

“...which are never able to remove sins.... [spiritually ...But He, after offering one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down at *the* right hand of God. Since that time, He is waiting until His enemies are placed *as* a footstool for His feet. For by one offering He has obtained eternal perfection *for* those who are sanctified. And the Holy Spirit also bears witness to us; for after He had previously said, “‘This *is* the covenant that I will establish with them after those days,” says *the* Lord: “***I will give My laws into their hearts, and I will inscribe them in their minds***”” (vs 11-16).

If God is going to do this for those whom He is calling, what was it with Christ? We’ve seen previously how He was taught of the Father. He always did the things that pleased His Father, and so forth.

Let's see something concerning David. We have seen in the past how some of the very words of David were the same thoughts that Christ said and spoke when He was here.

Acts 13:22: "And after removing him, He raised up David to be their king; to whom He also gave testimony, saying, "I have found David, the *son* of Jesse, **a man after My own heart**... [in other words 'a man who is yielded to Me, to have a heart according to My heart'] ...who will perform all My will."

Let's see some of the words of Christ given through David. In going through some of these, I often wonder what David thought when he read these words after he wrote them down. We'll see that in Psa. 40 is where the prophecy came from. Think of these as the words of Christ, as Christ communicating with the Father:

Psalm 40:4: "Blessed is the man who makes the LORD his trust..." Did Jesus always trust in the Father? *Yes!*

"...and does not respect the proud, nor those who turn aside to lies. O LORD my God, many things You have done, Your wonderful works and Your thoughts which are toward us... [we can say *toward Christ*] ...there is none to compare unto You; if I could declare and speak of them, they would be more than can be told. **Sacrifice and offering You did not desire**... [that's the quote] ...My ears You have opened; burnt offering and sin offering You have not required. Then I said, 'Lo, I come; in the scroll of the book it is written of Me; **I delight to do Your will, O My God**... [that certainly applies to Jesus Christ] ...and **Your Law is within My heart**.'" (vs 4-8).

Let's apply this to Christ and to David. Is that not why David was a man after God's own heart? Not only because he love God. If you love God you will also love His laws and commandments.

What he's talking about is his relationship between Christ and the Father. These are the words of Christ going back to the Father, and also a prophecy of Christ.

Verse 9: "I have preached righteousness in the great congregation... [Heb. 2, where Christ talks to the great congregation being the Church] ...lo, I have not kept back my lips, O LORD, You know. I have not hidden Your righteousness within my heart; I have declared Your faithfulness and Your salvation... [Did not Jesus do that? *Yes, He did!*] ...I have not hidden Your loving kindness and Your Truth from the great congregation. Do not withhold Your tender mercies from me, O LORD; let Your

loving kindness and Your Truth always preserve me" (vs 9-11). That could apply that to both David and Christ, to preserve Him while He was in the flesh.

Verse 12: "For evils without number have encircled me..." Didn't Christ have innumerable evils on every side of Him? *Yes!*

"...my iniquities..." (v 12)—talking about David. Sometimes this blends in one sentence into something of Christ then back out to David.

"...have taken hold on me, so that I am not able to look up; they are more than the hairs of my head, and my heart fails me. Be pleased, O LORD, to deliver me; O LORD, make haste to help me." (vs 12-13).

As the perfect sacrifice for all mankind and all the sins of the world heaped upon Jesus, this could apply in that way. They were not His own personal sins from His own personal transgressions, which He had *none*, but these are the sins of the world that He carried to the cross and presented there before God the Father. It could apply in that way.

Psalm 37:30: "The mouth of the righteous speaks wisdom, and his tongue talks of justice. The Law of his God is in his heart; none of his steps shall slide.... [perfect description of Christ] ...The wicked watches the righteous and seeks to kill him." (vs 30-32). You can read that in the Gospels. They were after Him, trying to kill Him.

Verse 33: "The LORD will not leave him in his hand, nor condemn him when he is judged. Wait on the LORD and keep His way, and He shall exalt you to inherit the earth; when the wicked are cut off, you shall see it" (vs 33-34). Again, this blends into some things about the thoughts of Christ, and back to the thoughts of David.

The key thing we really want to key on is right here, Psalm 40:8: "...**Your Law is within My heart**."

- How did it get within His heart?
- Was that something that Jesus retained with Him all through the process of divesting Himself to become a human being?
- Was it there all along?
- *I don't know! It doesn't say, but we know if it's in His heart, it would have to be with Christ!*

One other thing that this has with Christ, and this is something that we need to do, brethren. This is really a profound thing. David was this way! Christ was this way!

Psalm 57:7: “**My heart is fixed**, O God, my heart is fixed; I will sing and give praise.” When you love God, when His laws are within your heart and mind, your heart *will be fixed!* That’s what God wants.

Let’s look at some other things concerning the heart. We’re going to see how much the heart is involved. It’s not a matter of head-knowledge—which is fine, we all need head-knowledge—but head-knowledge puffs up! You need *heart-knowledge*, which then comes from the love of God to serve and help, and to draw you close to God.

Proverbs 3:1: “My son, do not forget my law, but let your heart keep my commandments; for they shall add length of days, and long life, and peace, to you” (vs 1-2). In relationship to Christ, this means eternal life, bringing many sons unto glory.

Verse 3: “Do not let mercy and Truth forsake you; bind them around your neck; **write them upon the tablet of your heart**... [that’s what God is concerned about] ...and so you shall find favor and good understanding in the sight of God and man. Trust in the LORD **with all your heart**...” (vs 3-5). Notice the emphasis on the heart. We’re going to see this all the way through.

“...and lean not to your own understanding” (v 5). I think one of the best and most wonderful sermonettes that I ever heard on this was given by Tom Crane at 82-years-old; he had never given a sermonette, no one had ever asked him. I asked him if he would bring it. It was wonderful! With his British accent it was not only wonderful but very delightful. I thought coming from him with such great sincerity and conviction it was really terrific.

Verse 6: “In all your ways acknowledge Him, and He shall direct your paths. Do not be wise in your own eyes; fear the LORD and depart from evil” (vs 6-7).

Proverbs 4:1: “O children, hear the instruction of a father, and be attentive in order to know understanding, for I give you good doctrine; do not forsake my law, for I was my father’s son... [just think of this in relationship to Christ] ...tender and the only *beloved* in the sight of my mother” (vs 1-3).

If you go through and do a study on all of those who are hardhearted, a tender heart is a rare and a wonderful spiritual thing that can only come from God, it really is. Just think of that in relationship to Christ.

Verse 4: “He also taught me, and said to me... [this could also apply to Christ as He was growing up] ...‘Let your heart hold fast my words;

keep my commandments and live.’” That’s very profound.

Psalm 86—some of this obviously does not apply directly to Christ, but I think there is so much more in here concerning the very thoughts of Christ in the Psalms than we have ever thought of. They can apply to David, as well, but some of them in particular just jump out as if really applying to Jesus Christ. Always remember that *if you sin, God knows!* With that in mind:

Psalm 86:5: “For **You, LORD, are good and ready to forgive, and rich in mercy to all those who call upon You**.” That’s repentance! When there’s repentance, He’s ready to forgive.

Verse 6: Give ear, O LORD, to my prayer, and attend to the voice of my supplications. In the day of my trouble I will call upon You, for You will answer me. Among the gods there is none like You, O LORD; neither are there any works like Your works. All nations whom You have made shall come and worship before You, O LORD, and shall glorify Your name, for You are great and do wonderful things; **You alone are God**. Teach me Your way, O LORD; I will walk in Your Truth; unite my heart to fear Your name. I will praise You, O LORD my God, with all my heart, and I will glorify Your name forevermore” (vs 6-12).

A lot of those could apply to Christ and what He was doing. Did not Christ glorify God forever in what He did? Here is something that is really terrific, think of this in relationship to having the whole Bible right in your own hands, especially here in Sabbath services that we can open it up and study together. I think the thing that God has done with this is so awesome, that He has done this and with all the brethren. As a matter of fact, you could have it that if the whole world chose to keep the Sabbath and study God’s Word, they could all do it because everybody has a Bible.

Psalm 12:6: “The words of the LORD are pure words, like silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times.” By the time we get it’s pretty pure.

### Survey of Psalm 119

With that in mind, as I mentioned, let’s look at Psa. 119. Not every verse can literally apply, but I think that a good many of them could apply as far as how Christ would view the laws, commandments, the Word, the statutes and the judgments of God. This reveals some very profound and spiritual things concerning the Word of God:

Psalm 119:160: “Your Word is true **from the beginning**, and every one of Your righteous

ordinances endures **forever.**”

When we get done with this study, you are going to understand how absolutely ludicrous it is to claim that Christ did away with anything, and that Christ came to do it for you. If He came to do it for you, then you have no choice. If you have no choice, then God cannot judge you for right or wrong, sin or evil.

Not only is His Word “...true from the beginning...” but this, I think, is one of the most profound verses in all of Psa. 119:

Verse 128: “Therefore, **I esteem all Your precepts concerning all things to be right...**” How much in agreement do we have to be with God?

- if God is perfect
- if God is righteous—which He is
- if He can never tell a lie—which He cannot
- if His Word is true from the beginning

then all of His precepts concerning all things, are right.

I think if we can get to this kind of heart, mind and attitude, just think how much more that God can grant us in understanding of His way. Just think how much more we can learn, because we’re willing to learn.

Contrast that with going through the Bible and trying to study and figure out where God said, ‘We don’t have to do this, don’t have to do that, or the other thing, and we’ll get rid of this because Christ kept it for you. He is your rest.’

“...and I hate every false way” (v 128). Part of loving Truth is hating iniquity, which is opposite of all of this ecumenism that’s going on. ‘Let’s live with our differences and find common ground.’ You’re dead from the first word. That’s one of the reasons why Christ is Christ.

There is a way to hate iniquity, but not hate the person who is the sinner and deceived. Hate what is deceiving them.

Hebrews 1:8: “But on the other hand, of the Son *He says*, ‘Your throne, O God...’” Why can’t people understand that Christ is God, by this one verse?

“...*is* into the ages of eternity; a scepter of righteousness *is* the scepter of Your kingdom. You loved righteousness and hated lawlessness; because of this, God, **even Your God,** has anointed You with *the* oil of gladness above Your companions” (vs 8-9). There we have it the Father is God and the Son is God—right there!

He loved righteousness and hated iniquity, because iniquity, lies and sin take people away from God.

We’re not going to go through every verse, but we’ll survey these things and see a tremendous and wonderful attitude that Jesus had to have had. If these are not His very words, I don’t know what could be closer to it than these.

Psalm 119:1: “Blessed are the undefiled in the way, **who walk in the Law of the LORD.**” Not outside of it! Not hating it! Not doing away with it! They are undefiled and walking in *the Way*, and Christ is *the Way*—‘I am the Way, the Truth and the Life,’ Who walked in *the Way* of the Lord.

- What is sin? *The transgression of the Law!*
- Did Jesus ever sin? *No!*
- Was He always walking in *the Way*? *Yes!*

Therefore, He was walking in the Law of the Lord.

Verse 2: “Blessed are they who keep His testimonies and who **seek Him with the whole heart.**” I want you to see how much the heart is involved in all of this. That’s why God wants your heart. That’s more important than anything else. “...**seek Him with the whole heart.**” Not just part time, not just when you want to, but with your *whole heart!*

Verse 3: “They also do no iniquity...” How can you minimize sin in your life? *You’ve got the answer right here:*

- with the Spirit of God
- with the love of God
- with seeking Him with the whole heart

“...they walk in **His** ways” (v 3). I also want you to notice something very, very important; this is something profound that we need to understand:

When we seek with our whole heart, Who are we seeking? *God!* Most people are seeking *something from* God. They are wanting something from God rather than wanting God! It just dawned on me, while I was preparing for this study, that that is really profound. How do we seek answers to our prayers? *By seeking God!*

Most people seek a blessing or they want a physical thing, or they want happiness. They want relief from their misery or want money. They want a husband or a wife. They want this or that, so they pray for that. Their big mistake is that they *are not seeking God!* If you are seeking God with all your heart, will not God take care of all those things for you? *Yes, He will!* That is something! That is so profound, but it is so simple!

How many times have each one of us asked for this, that or the other, and then we say, 'I wonder why God didn't answer that prayer?' The answer is that you are *seeking something*, but ***you were not seeking God!***

Jesus also said to 'seek the Kingdom of God *first*, and all the other things would be added.' If you are seeking the Kingdom, you are seeking God. Therefore, you can have a tender heart; you can have a heart according to God's will. Does God not want to give that to you? *Think on that!* Think of all the futile exercises that have been given—brethren, do this, that and the other thing—and you apply the human rationale of wanting a thing, a result or a consequence when God *wants you, and He wants you to seek Him!*

What did Christ do? *He always sought the Father!* He always did the things that were pleasing in the Father's sight; He always spoke the words of the Father.

Verse 4: "You have commanded us to keep Your precepts ***diligently***." Precepts become important; they go beyond words, laws, commandments, statutes or testimonies. Precepts can even be a thought. You have a precept or concept in your mind.

Verse 5: "O that my ways were directed to keep Your statutes!" I'm sure that's David speaking. I'm sure that's not Christ.

Verse 6: "Then I shall not be ashamed when I have respect unto ***all*** Your commandments." Not just the ones you think are good.

If you think some of the commandments are good, but not all of them are good, you're telling God that what you did was bad. Therefore, you're ending up judging the Law and God! You're not a doer of the Law, but a judge, and you have placed yourself above God, because you're judging what God has done.

I know that those thoughts are kind of heavy, but you need to think on it. This is how you separate out all of the chaff of all of this 'religiosity' and arguments that people have.

Verse 7: "I will praise You with uprightness of heart when I have learned Your righteous judgments. I will keep Your statutes; O forsake me not utterly. With what shall a young man cleanse his way? ***By taking heed according to Your Word***" (vs 7-9). Of course this applies to the young, the old, all human beings.

Verse 10: "With ***all my heart*** I have sought You..." It just struck me, in going through this, how important that is. Therefore, He could say, 'My heart

is fixed!'

"...O let me not wander from Your commandments. Your Word I have laid up in my heart..." (vs 10-11). Remember that it says, 'Your Law is in My heart.' Christ had the Word of God hidden in His heart, all the commandments and everything there.

"...so that I might not sin against You" (v 11). That has got to be some of the thoughts of Christ, Who was tempted 'in every way like we are, but without sin.' This had to be on His mind.

Verse 12: "Blessed are You, O LORD; teach me Your statutes. With my lips I have declared all the judgments of Your mouth. I have rejoiced in the way of Your testimonies as much as in all riches" (vs 12-14).

David had a lot of riches, so this could apply to David. But Christ, in the flesh, after having given up all the riches of being God, He could rejoice in the testimonies of God more than all that He had, because He *knew* that that's what would bring Him back.

Verse 15: "I will meditate upon Your precepts and have respect to Your ways." Notice that it's a wholehearted effort in everything.

Verse 16: "I will delight myself in Your statutes; I will not forget Your Word. Deal bountifully with Your servant, that I may live and keep Your Word" (vs 16-17).

Verse 18 is the way we ought to approach all of the Word of God: "***Open my eyes so that I may behold wondrous things out of Your Law***"—which means to understand:

- the love behind it
- the basis for why it's right
- the basis for why it's good

Apply this to *all* the Word of God. God has to reveal all these things to us. We don't come by it just because we apply ourselves and study. God has to give us of His Spirit to understand. He has to open it.

If you're studying the Scriptures and you're going along and you say, 'Oh, I never understood that before.' God is opening something to you. That is a tremendous experience when that happens!

My prayer is that this can continue to be. How many wonderful things that are in the Word of God that we don't yet know? *I don't know!* But if we keep this attitude and keep reaching out the way God wants us to, asking God to open our eyes that we may see...

Ephesians 1—this part is so marvelous, and

I do believe that this prayer of Paul as he was praying for the Church applies to all of us.

Ephesians 1:17: “that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give you *the* spirit of wisdom and revelation in *the* knowledge of Him. And may the eyes of your mind... [understanding] ...be enlightened...” (vs 17-18).

Psalm 119:18: “Open my eyes so that I may behold wondrous things out of Your Law.”

Ephesians 1:18: “...in order that you may **comprehend what is the hope of His calling**, and what *are* the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of His power toward us who believe, according to the inner working of His mighty power” (vs 18-19).

That’s what God wants for us. Isn’t it a shame, brethren, that even the Church of God got turned into a merchandizing thing, and became just a ‘religion’ of do this and that, send your money in? What a shame? If we love God, seek Him with our whole heart and ask Him to open our eyes and see the wonderful things that He has in His Word, all the rest will be taken care of.

- Won’t God provide a way?
- Won’t God intervene and heal? *Yes!*
- Won’t God intervene and answer prayer? *Yes!*

—*because we’re seeking Him!*

We’re not just seeking a benefit. That’s what happened with the Israelites at Mt. Sinai. God spoke and they said, ‘O God, we don’t want to hear You, we’ll listen to Moses, but we don’t want to hear You.’ It’s the same way. If you seek something from God, you’re not seeking Him. It’s the same kind of attitude.

Unless we really learn it from the Word of God, how are we to know? We don’t know, we just run around with the ‘gimmees.’ When we don’t get the ‘gimmees’ then we get mad at God because He doesn’t deliver the goods, and He promised. But we haven’t sought Him the way we should. Amazing! Here it is in the Word of God all this time—amazing! It just makes me wonder when will we ever get the point? How many years?

Psalm 119:19: “I am a stranger in the earth... [that applies to Christ directly] ...do not hide Your commandments from me. My soul breaks for the longing that it has for Your judgments at all times” (vs 19-20).

{Note Sermon Series: *Judge Righteous Judgment*} God wants us to judge righteous judgment. I’m sure Christ understood, because He said of the Pharisees, ‘I have many things to say in

judgment of you.’ But they be righteous judgment.

Verse 20: “My soul breaks for the longing that it has for Your judgments at all times.” What a wonderful thing it is to know the judgment of God. Judgments come from righteousness.

Verse 21: “You have rebuked the proud who are cursed, who go astray from Your commandments. Remove cursing and reproach from me, for I have kept Your testimonies. Even though princes sat and spoke against me, **Your servant did meditate on Your statutes**” (vs 21-23). This could apply to David or to Christ.

Verse 24: “Your testimonies also are my delight; they are my counselors.” I read this and I feel so deficient in the knowledge and Word of God.

(go to the next track)

There has got to be so much more in the Word of God and with the Spirit of God for us to understand that we can hardly wait to learn. Think of what it’s going to be like to be a spirit being and have a spirit-mind and be able to comprehend and grasp the things in a way more closely that God does. Obviously, we won’t be able to do it immediately, but more closely, too.

### God’s Word

We’re going to see how much Christ loved the Word of God. How much David loved the Word of God.

Verse 25: “My soul cleaves to the dust; revive me **according to Your Word**.”

Verse 28: My soul melts away for sorrow; strengthen me **according to Your Word**.”

I want you to notice all the things that are according to the Word of God. That means that you are to know the promises of God. What is Christ called? *In the beginning was the Word, the Word was with God and the Word was God!*

Verse 38: “**Fulfill Your Word** to Your servant, so that You may be feared.” He sure trusted in the Word of God!

Verse 41: “Let Your mercies come also unto me, O LORD, even according to Your salvation, **according to Your Word**.” Is God going to let any word fall? {note Deut. 28:18-20 and speaking the Word of God.}

Verse 42: “That I may have an answer for the one who reproaches me...” When you’re hauled before kings and so forth, don’t give a thought, but the Father shall inspire what you should say (Matt. 10). That’s how you’re going to answer.

“...for **I trust in Your Word**” (v 42).

Verse 49: “**Remember the Word to Your servant** upon which You have caused me to hope.” If you get down and discouraged, go claim some of the promises of God, but seek God while you’re doing it.

Verse 50: “This is my comfort in my affliction, that **Your Word has given me life**”—when I’m down and out.

A lot of instruction here. Just simple, short powerful and meaningful verses.

Verse 57: You are my portion, O LORD; I have said that I would keep Your words. I entreated Your favor with all my heart; be gracious unto me **according to Your Word**” (vs 57-58).

Verse 65: “You have dealt well with Your servant, O LORD, **according to Your Word**.”

Verse 67: “Before I was afflicted I went astray... [why we have trials] ...but **now I have kept Your Word**.” It brings you back to keeping the Word of God.

Verse 74: “Those who fear You will be glad when they see me because **I have hoped in Your Word**.” That can apply to David and Christ directly.

Verse 76: “I beseech You, let Your steadfast love comfort me, according to Your promise to Your servant.” Remember: *the Holy Spirit is called the Comforter, the Helper!*

Verse 81: “My soul faints for Your salvation; **I hope in Your Word**. My eyes fail for Your Word, saying, ‘When will You comfort me?’” (vs 81-82). We just covered some of it here.

### **Commandments & the Law**

Psalm 119:29: “Remove from me the way of lying...” That’s so easy because the mind is so deceitful above everything. You may not lie to other people, but *you may lie to yourself*. That happens when you don’t want to admit...

“...and **grant me Your Law** graciously” (v 29). That’s almost a contradiction. How can you have grace and law? *It’s not because law and grace go together!*

Verse 34: Give me understanding, that **I may keep Your Law** and observe it with all my heart.” It’s to be kept with understand that comes from God.

Verse 44: “So shall **I keep Your Law continually forever and ever**.” I want you to understand how much it’s saying, “...I keep Your Law...”

Verse 51: The proud have utterly scorned me... [that certainly applies to Christ] ...yet, **I do not turn aside from Your Law**.”

Verse 53: “Burning indignation has taken hold upon me because of **the wicked who forsake Your Law**.”

We’ve got the keeping of the Law *vs* the forsaking of the Law. But the whole key is that you’re seeking God *first* in all of this with your whole heart!

Verse 61: “The bands of the wicked have surrounded me, but **I have not forgotten Your Law**.”

- you are to keep it
- you are to remember it
- you are not to forget it

Verse 69: “The proud have forged a lie against Me... [directly against Christ] ...but I will keep Your precepts with all my heart. Their heart is gross like fat... [the proud that lie against Christ] ...**but I delight in Your Law**” (vs 69-70). We’re to keep it and not forget it; we’re to delight in it.

Verse 72: “**The Law of Your mouth** is better to me than thousands of gold and silver.”

Verse 77: “Let Your tender mercies come to me so that I may live, for **Your Law is my delight**.”

Verse 85: “The proud have dug pits for me, men who do not act **according to Your Law**.”

I would like you to study though every one of these verses and break them down: commandments, law, word, statutes, testimony, precepts and so forth. Precepts would be more the will of God, encompassing everything.

Verse 97: “**O how love I Your law!** It is my meditation all the day.” What does the carnal mind do? *It hates the laws of God, or takes them and misuses them!*

Verse 113: “I hate those who are double-minded... [vain thoughts; they are wasted on the self] ...but **Your Law do I love**.” Did Christ love the Law of God? *Yes!*

I think this has to do with not only David’s attitude, but Christ’s attitude, v 126: “**It is time for the LORD to work, for they have made void Your Law**.” How about that; that’s what all of those who profess this ‘new Christianity’ type thing. What did the scribes and Pharisees do with their traditions? *They made void the Law of God!*

Verse 127: “Therefore, **I love Your**

commandments above gold—yea, above fine gold. Therefore, **I esteem...** [hold in the highest regard] **...all Your precepts concerning all things to be right, and I hate every false way**" (vs 127-128).

- we are to love the Law of God
- we are to love the commandments of God

Why? *We, first of all, love God!*

### How to Keep the Commandments

Psalm 119: 32: "**I will run the way of Your commandments** for You shall enlarge my heart." Keeping the commandments of God is the way. If you're going to be running, that's rather enthusiastic—isn't it? It's not sort of meandering, not sort of thinking about it or getting around to it.

Verse 35: "Make me to walk in the path of Your commandments, for **I delight in them.**" We saw the love of the commandments of God, now *delight* in the commandments of God.

Verse 47: "And **I will delight myself in Your commandments, which I have loved.** And I will lift up my hands unto Your commandments, **which I have loved,** and I will meditate on Your statutes." (vs 47-48).

Love brings fullness to the Law so that it's right and good (Rom. 13:8).

Verse 60: "**I made haste and did not delay to keep Your commandments.**" Not only did Christ run in them, delight in them, love them, He made haste to keep them!

Verse 66: "Teach me good judgment..." That could apply to David and to Christ, because He said, 'I judge not of Myself, but I judge as the Father gave Me commandment. His Word is true!

"...and knowledge, for **I have believed Your commandments**" (v 66). Tie that all together:

- love them
- keep them
- run in them
- delight in them
- believe them

Isn't that something?

Verse 73: "Your hands have made me and formed me; give me understanding **so that I may learn Your commandments.**" That is more than just understanding the words of them. I'm sure that is to understand in depth the whole meaning and reason behind all of them.

Verse 86: "**All Your commandments are faithful;** they persecute me wrongfully; help Me!"

This would have to apply to Christ.

Verse 96: "I have seen an end to every purpose, but **Your commandment is exceedingly broad.**" Not some narrow little thing.

Take the commandment that you 'shall have no other gods before Me.' That is the broadest of all of the commandments—isn't it? *Very broad!*

Verse 98: "**Your commandments make me wiser than my enemies,** for they are ever with me." Just think what the Word of God will do for you! I can't help but think of the phrase, 'Let the Word of God dwell in you richly,' *fully.*

Verse 115: "Depart from me, you evildoers, for **I will keep the commandments of my God.**"

Verse 131: "I opened my mouth and panted, for **I longed for Your commandments.**"

- delight in them
- run in them
- long for them

Verse 143: "Trouble and anguish have taken hold upon me, yet, **Your commandments are my delight.**"

Verse 151: "You are near, O LORD, and **all Your commandments are Truth.**" We see that

- the Law is Truth
- the commandments are Truth
- the precepts are Truth
- the statutes are Truth
- God is Truth

Will you expect any less from God? *No!*

Verse 163: "I hate and despise lying, but **I love Your Law.** Seven times a day do I praise You because of Your righteous judgments. **Great peace have those who love Your law, and there is no stumbling block for them**" (vs 163-165)—*if* you have sought God! That's a tough one, but it is true.

Verse 166: "LORD, I have hoped for Your salvation, and **have done Your commandments.**"

Verse 172: "My tongue shall speak of Your word, for **all Your commandments are righteousness.**" How can we look upon the commandments of God as being evil, harsh and something that we shouldn't do? *It just makes you wonder!* Especially when people, who are supposed to be converted, sit in a congregation and don't even respond to some of these lies that come down!

It makes you wonder if they've been sort of programmed to not respond? *I don't know!* But I hope and pray that God will intervene and prick

them in the heart, mind and spirit that they can see the Truth.

Verse 176: “I have gone astray like a lost sheep... [David, not Christ] ...seek Your servant... [come and find me, I’m lost] ...for **I do not forget Your commandments.**” *That’s something!*

### **Precepts**

We’ve talked about precepts being the concepts of God.

Psalm 119:27: “**Make me to understand the way of Your precepts,** and so shall I speak of Your wonderful works.” Understanding comes from God!

I would have to say, brethren, as I’m going through here, I’m thinking to myself: I really want to do things this way; I want to know these things, and I hope that I can, and I hope that I can teach it to the brethren so that they can know. The whole thing in speaking is not to speak, but that we can all learn from the Word of God together with His Spirit. That’s when Sabbath services really become profound. Then you can:

- love God
- love each other
- remember the things of God

When David says, “**Make me to understand the way of Your precepts...**” it reminds me that we need to learn to *think* with the Word of God. If we do, we don’t have to come off self-righteous about it. We don’t have to. That’s not the point. *If we’re going to have the mind of Christ, we need to think with the Word of God.*

Verse 40: “Behold, **I have longed after Your precepts...**” Not only make me understand, but I *long* after them. No wonder David was a man ‘according to the heart of God.

“...give me life in Your righteousness” (v 40).

Verse 45: “And I will walk at liberty, for **I seek Your precepts.**”

Verse 55: “I have remembered Your name, O LORD, in the night, and have kept Your Law. This I had **because I kept Your precepts**” (vs 55-56)—all the precepts of God!

Verse 63: “I am a companion of all who fear You, and of **those who keep Your precepts.**”

Verse 78: “Let the proud be ashamed, for with guile they have wronged Me... [without a cause. That’s got to apply to Christ] ...but **I will**

### **meditate on Your precepts.**”

Verse 69: “The proud have forged a lie against Me, but **I will keep Your precepts with all my heart.**”

I guess the precepts of God are pretty important. Don’t have to guess, we can just know that they are.

Verse 87: “...but **I did not forsake Your precepts.**”

Verse 94: “I am Yours; save me, for **I have sought Your precepts.**” Think about this in relationship to Christ. All the time that He was on the earth doing the will of the Father—*keeping the laws, commandments, statutes, judgments of God*—in constant spiritual communication with God, having this kind of attitude of seeking God with His whole heart, *you can understand why Christ did not sin!*

- this was His whole motivation
- this was His whole thought
- this is how He operated

Verse 100: “I understand more than the ancients because **I keep Your precepts.**”

Verse 104: “**Through Your precepts I get understanding...** [thinking with the Word of God] ...therefore, I hate every false way.”

### **Testimonies**

A testimony is *hear and listen*. If you do this or that I testify to you.

Psalm 119:22: “Remove cursing and reproach from me, for **I have kept Your testimonies.**”

Verse 24: “Your **testimonies also are my delight; they are my counselors.**” What an attitude toward everything that God has.

Verse 31: “**I cleave to Your testimonies;** O LORD, do not put me to shame.”

Verse 36: “**Incline my heart to Your testimonies,** and not to covetousness.”

If we can do that! Not only is he seeking God with the whole heart, but he’s seeking everything of God and His way:

- His precepts
- His laws
- His commandments
- His judgments
- His statutes
- His testimonies

Verse 79: "Let those who fear You turn to me, and **those who have known Your testimonies.**" What do we call it? *The Old Testament and the New Testament!* That applies.

Verse 88: "Give me life according to Your loving kindness; **so shall I keep the testimony of Your mouth.**" The testimony of God!

Verse 125: "I am Your servant; **give me understanding that I may know Your testimonies.**" It's everywhere!

Verse 129: "**Your testimonies are wonderful...** [delight after them, long for them, want them; they're wonderful] ...therefore, my soul keeps them."

Verse 119: "You destroy all the wicked of the earth like dross; therefore, **I love Your testimonies.**" This tells us that all the testimonies of God concerning the wicked and their way is going to happen.

- He loved them
- He kept them
- He loved the commandments of God
- He loved the Word of God
- He loved the statutes of God
- He loved the precepts of God
- He loved the testimonies of God

Verse 152: "**Concerning Your testimonies,** I have known of old that **You have founded them forever.**"

Verse 157: "Many are my persecutors and my enemies, yet, **I do not turn aside from Your testimonies.**" That has got to refer to Christ.

Verse 168: "**I have kept Your precepts and Your testimonies,** for all my ways are before You."

I go through this and read this and think: My, wouldn't it be wonderful if you could really do all of this that way? I just have to say that *the day will come, when we are spirit beings!* That will be something!

There's an awful lot here. We could go on and on. We've covered about all the major things we need to do here, but I really think that this shows us the attitude of Christ. I think it is a prophecy as to be why Christ said the things that He did.

Use this as a springboard for further study! We know this; this is fundamental. Read Matt. 5 in the light of Psa. 119:

Matthew 5:17: "**Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did**

**not come to abolish, but to fulfill.**" There are two ways that this means:

1. if you view it that the laws and commandments in the letter brought the laws of God *half-full*
2. *to fulfill* means to bring them to *their fullest standard* of spiritual requirement.

That is true, but also that Christ came to fulfill all the things concerning Himself and in the Law and the Prophets.

Verse 18: "For truly I say to you, until the heaven and the earth shall pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no way pass from the Law until everything has been fulfilled. **Therefore, whoever shall break one of these least commandments...**" (vs 18-19)—which we are to:

- delight in
- run in
- seek for
- long for
- love

"...and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the Kingdom of Heaven; but **whoever shall practice and teach them...** [which Christ did] ...**this one shall be called great in the Kingdom of Heaven.** For I say to you, **unless your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, there is no way that you shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven**" (vs 19-20). Then He begins to explain how that righteousness is to exceed that which they have.

The scribes and Pharisees were *stuck* on the letter of the Law. Therefore, when you are *stuck* on the letter of the Law you look to the letter of the Law and you are not seeking and loving God, and you are not loving His words. That's how you exceed *their* righteousness.

When you first read that you might have wondered how that could be, these were such 'righteous' people. Well, ***according to the true spiritual standard as laid out in Psa. 119, they weren't!***

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) Hebrews 10:1-16
- 2) Acts 13:22
- 3) Psalm 40:4-13
- 4) Psalm 37:30-34
- 5) Psalm 40:8
- 6) Psalm 57:7
- 7) Proverbs 3:1-7
- 8) Proverbs 4:1-4
- 9) Psalm 86:5-12
- 10) Psalm 12:6
- 11) Psalm 119:160, 128
- 12) Hebrews 1:8-9
- 13) Psalm 119:1-18
- 14) Ephesians 1:17-18
- 15) Psalm 119:18
- 16) Ephesians 1:18-
- 17) Psalm 119:19-25, 28, 38, 41-42, 49-50, 57-58, 65, 67, 74, 76, 81-82
- 18) Psalm 119:29, 34, 44, 51, 53, 61, 69-70, 72, 77, 85, 97, 113, 126-128
- 19) Psalm 119:32, 35, 47-48, 60, 66, 73, 86, 96, 98, 115, 131, 143, 151, 163-166, 172, 176
- 20) Psalm 119:27, 40, 45, 55-56, 63, 78, 69, 87, 94, 100, 104
- 21) Psalm 119:22, 24, 31, 36, 79, 88, 125, 129, 119, 152, 157, 168
- 22) Matthew 5:17-20

Scripture reference, not quoted:

- Deuteronomy 28:18-20
- Matthew 10
- Romans 13:8

Also referenced: Sermon Series:

*Judge Righteous Judgment*

FRC:bo

Transcribed: 5-21-15

## Three Prophetic Periods of Daniel 9 Covenant of Covenants

Fred R. Coulter

### Daniel's 70-week prophecy in Dan. 9

This has been one of the most difficult for those to understand. I might say that since I have used, for a good portion of this series, the book by Arnold Fruchtenbaum, *Messianic Christology*, I would have to say that he does not have the dates accurate or correct. He sums it up by saying that the Messiah had to have been crucified before 70 A.D. That gives an awful lot of sliding time, and the prophecies that were given to Daniel were far more accurate than that. We will see that there are three segments to the 70-weeks prophecy.

Daniel 9:23: "At the beginning of your supplications the word went forth, and I have come to declare it..." In other words, God said to Gabriel: go. I think it's very interesting, when you go through all of the prophecies having to do directly with Jesus Christ, Gabriel is the one who apparently is in charge of that.

- Who was it that spoke to Zechariah, John the Baptist's father? *Gabriel!*
- Who was it that spoke to Mary? *Gabriel!*
- Who is it that is speaking to Daniel? *Gabriel! To bring the prophecies of the coming of Christ!*

What we are going to see is that this talks about Christ's first coming and His second coming. We're going to learn that part of our understanding in the past was not correct. Even what I wrote in *A Harmony of the Gospels* (first edition) was not correct because we did not understand it the way that it should have been understood.

"...for you are greatly beloved; therefore, consider the word, and understand the vision" (v 23). Of course, he never did understand it.

### The prophetic segments/periods of v 24:

1. "Seventy weeks are decreed upon your people and upon your Holy city..."
2. "...to finish the transgression and to make an end of sin..."
3. "...and to make reconciliation for iniquity..."
4. "...and to bring in everlasting righteousness..."
5. "...and to seal up the vision and prophecy..."
6. "...and to anoint the Most Holy"

I suppose you could even break those down in to seven if you wanted to, if you wanted to split the one concerning the people and the city.

Verse 25: "Know, therefore, and understand that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem, to Messiah the Prince, **shall be seven weeks, and sixty-two weeks**. It shall be built again with streets and the wall, even in troublous times. And after sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off but not for Himself. And the people of the prince who shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. But his end *shall be* with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined. And he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week. And in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the offering to cease, and upon the wing of abominations shall come one who makes desolate even until the consummation. And the fully determined end which is decreed shall be poured out upon the desolator" (vs 25-27).

### The three prophetic periods of Daniel's 70-week prophecy:

#### I. The First Seven Years

We'll see that this begins shortly after Nebuchadnezzar is struck mad, which is 567 B.C. We find the whole account concerning Nebuchadnezzar in Dan. 4:29-33.

#### Notes from Carl Franklin:

- Daniel and the sister of the Hazaras governed Babylon during this period
- God takes advantage of Nebuchadnezzar's period of madness to fulfill His prophecy
- God had apparently meant that Nebuchadnezzar fulfill them, but in his vanity he had to be struck mad for seven years

Here's where the command goes out to rebuild. Most of the chronologies have Nehemiah coming in to Jerusalem at a later date, and this is incorrect; He is really quite early. He's actually there before the time that Ezra comes.

Nehemiah 1:1: "The words of Nehemiah the son of Hachaliah. And it came to pass in the month Chislev, in the twentieth year, as I was in Shushan the palace... [Shushan is in Persia] ...Hanani, one of my brethren, came, he and certain men of Judah.

And I asked them concerning the Jews who had escaped, who were left of the captivity, and concerning Jerusalem. And they said to me, 'The remnant who are left of the captivity there in the province *are* in great affliction and reproach. And the wall of Jerusalem *is* broken down, and its gates are burned with fire.' And it came to pass when I heard these words, I sat down and wept. And I mourned *for* days, and fasted, and prayed before the God of heaven. And I said, 'I pray You, O LORD God of heaven, the great and awesome God Who keeps covenant and mercy for those who love Him and keep His commandments; let Your ear now be attentive, and Your eyes open, so that You may hear the prayer of Your servant, which I pray before You now, day and night, for the children of Israel Your servants, and confessing the sins of the children of Israel which we have sinned against You. Both I and my father's house have sinned'" (vs 1-6).

I think it is interesting that this is very similar to what Daniel did at the beginning part of Dan. 9 when he confessed all the sins of Israel. It goes on showing that 'we have dealt very corruptly' and so forth.

Nehemiah 2:1: "And it came to pass in the month Nisan, in the twentieth year of Artaxerxes the king, when wine *was* before him, that I took up the wine and gave *it* to the king. Now I had not been sad in his presence before, And the king said to me, 'Why *is* your countenance sad, seeing you *are* not sick? This *is* nothing but sorrow of heart.' Then I was very much afraid. And *I* said to the king, 'Let the king live forever. Why should not my countenance be sad when the city, the place of my fathers' tombs, *lies* waste, and its gates are destroyed by fire?' And the king said to me, 'For what do you ask?' So, I prayed to the God of heaven, and I said to the king, 'If it please the king, and if your servant has found favor in your sight, that you would send me to Judah, to the city of my fathers' tombs, so that I may build it.' And the king said to me (the queen also sitting by him), 'For how long shall your journey be? And when will you return?' So, it pleased the king to send me, and I set him a time. And I said to the king, 'If it please the king, let letters be given me to the governors beyond the river... [this is the decree]: ...so that they may let me pass through until I come to Judah, and a letter to Asaph the keeper of the king's forest, so that he may give me timber to make beams for the gates of the palace which *belong* to the house, and for the wall of the city, and for the house into which I shall enter.' And the king granted me what I asked, according to the good hand of my God upon me" (vs 1-8). Then it gives the rest of the journey and so forth and how he got there.

That is the decree for the beginning of the building of Jerusalem. That took 49 years, the first seven weeks of the 70 minus 7 times 7 equals 49 years. This took place from 564-515<sub>B.C.</sub> That year Nehemiah was made governor of Judea. Neh. 5 shows that he was governor for 12 years.

Nehemiah 5:14: "Moreover, from the time that I was appointed to be their governor in the land of Judah, from the twentieth year even to the thirty-second year of Artaxerxes the king, twelve years, I and my brethren have not eaten the bread of the governor." He provided his own, not being charged to the governor or the king. While he was set there to be the governor of the Jews, he was there for 12 years.

There is a gap in the Hebrew between the first 7 weeks and the following 62 weeks of the 70-week prophecy.

Daniel 9:25: "Know, therefore, and understand *that* from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem... [that's what we saw in Neh.] ...to Messiah the Prince, shall be seven weeks, and sixty-two weeks...." There's a split right there. The seven is separated off by itself.

"...It shall be built again with streets and the wall, even in troublous times" (v 25). That is the 49 years in which Jerusalem was being rebuilt.

Verse 26 starts something else out different and it picks it up with; "And **after sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off but not for Himself....**" This is when Christ was crucified. Christ was crucified on the Passover Day in 30<sub>A.D.</sub>

The way you find out when the 62-weeks begins—there are three different periods here—is that you count back from when He was cut off because that tells you the end of the matter. It doesn't tell us when the 62-weeks begins, but it tells us when it ends. That's similar to what we have done with some of the prophecies in the book of Revelation and when these things take place. The end of the segment concerning the 62-weeks is when the "**...Messiah shall be cut off but not for Himself....**" How He was cut off "...not for Himself..." but **for the sins of the people** (Isa. 53). Likewise here, He "...shall be cut off..."—crucified and not for what He has done.

### **Prophetic Period Two:**

#### Notes from Carl Franklin:

- Malachi prophecies 410-409<sub>B.C.</sub>
- Malachi is written during the priesthood of the wicked Jonathan—son of Joiada,

or Judas, the brother of Jesus [not Christ]—who was murdered in the temple and Messiah, *Josephus* gives a reference there.

- *Josephus* deliberately confuses this Messiah with a later Messiah, thus throwing off the dating of the prophecies of Malachi

Then he lists the Persian kings that were there.

The beginning of the 62 of the 70-weeks prophecy is 405-404<sub>B.C.</sub> That's when it begins. You go 69 weeks or 434 years. That takes you down to 30<sub>A.D.</sub>

The way that you do this is that you come to that point and you count back, and since you don't know exactly when the 62-weeks begins, that's why Daniel could not understand it. What you have to do is to wait for the completing of the event and then you count backwards to see where it began.

Just like we did when we were trying to understand some of the prophecies in the book of Revelation to try and put those together. We saw the conclusion of the matter and counted back. That way it gave us a perspective as to when these things could be. We did that with the 'cutting off of the sacrifices' and counted back. {note charts from *Daniel/Revelation Series*.

Dan. 9:25-26 refers to this Prince as a special Prince, the Anointed One, the Messiah. We're talking about two different 'princes' here. That's what becomes important.

"...Messiah the Prince..." (v 25) is capitalized when you read it in the Scriptures. The latter part of v 26 refers to a prince to come after Christ. He is not said to be the 'Anointed One,' but merely one of the princes of the world.

Verse 26: "And after sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off but not for Himself. And the people of the prince who shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. But his end *shall be* with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined."

What happens is that when you come to the end of the 62-weeks, there is a break in the Hebrew, even in the way it is written. There's a special what is called an 'atna' [^], which means to *stop at this point because the subject discontinues*. What comes after that is another subject, which is "...**the people of the prince**, who shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. But his end *shall be* with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined" (v 26). Then there is another major

break. This time designated in the Hebrew with a colon [;]. Franklin says:

Showing, I believe, a prophetic leap to the last week or the last 7 years of the 70-weeks. In Hebrew, this pause simply looks like our colon.

### Prophetic Period Three:

Verse 27: "And he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week...." That is at the time of the end.

Daniel 8:23: "And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors have come to the full, a king, fierce of countenance and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up. And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power. And he shall destroy marvelously, and shall prosper and *do his own will*, and destroy the mighty and the Holy people. And also through his cunning he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand. And he shall magnify himself in his heart..." (vs 23-25). {note: *Mark of the Beast* (Dan/Rev series) to get some of the other things that go with this.

"...and in time of security shall destroy many. He also shall stand up against the Prince of princes. But he shall be broken without a human hand" (vs 25)—taken care of by the power of God, not some human being.

Dan. 11 talks about the covenant that would be made; Daniel 11:22: "And the overflowing forces will be swept from before him, and they will be broken... [referring to armies] ...and also the prince of the covenant." This is the prince which is referred to, 'the people of the prince, and he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week,' or 7 years.

Verse 23: "And after the league is made with him he shall work deceitfully, for he shall come up and shall become strong with a small *force*. He shall enter peaceably, even into the rich places of *the* realm.... [coming into the land of Israel] ...And he shall do what his fathers have not done, nor his fathers' fathers. He shall distribute among them the prey, spoil and riches. And he shall devise his plots against the strongholds, but only for a time" (vs 23-24). That prophecy applies to when he makes the covenant.

That's why when we go through what is the end-time, we say the end-time is seven years: three and one-half years of peace and prosperity, because he makes the covenant for one week. Then in the midst of that 'week he shall cause the sacrifice and the offering to cease' (Dan. 9:27<sub>[transcriber's correction]</sub>).

When we count back the 1,290 days we come to the 10<sup>th</sup> of Nisan, and the 10<sup>th</sup> of Nisan is when the Jews would select their Passover lambs to be slain at the temple. So, he cuts the sacrifices off at that point, then he receives the deadly wound that is healed. The second part of the one-week will take place.

Daniel 9:27 "...And in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the offering to cease..." This is not referring to Christ, as we used to believe, because when Christ died the sacrifice and offerings continued for another 40 years. The only one who caused the sacrifice and oblations to cease, are in the persons of two people:

1. Antiochus Epiphanes
2. the one at the end-time

He's going to go and sit in the temple of God and say that he's 'God' (2-Thess.).

"...and upon the wing of abominations shall come one who makes desolate..." (v 27)—the 'abomination of desolation' spoken of by Daniel the prophet. We will see that in the midst of the week, when he does this, this is the beginning of the Tribulation.

Matthew 24:14: "And this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be proclaimed in all the world for a witness to all nations; and then shall the end come." There is yet going to be a tremendous preaching of the Gospel in the whole world. Exactly how God is going to do that we don't know, yet, but when God opens the door, hopefully we can become part of that, if that's what God desires.

Verse 15: "Therefore, when you see the abomination of desolation, which was spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the Holy place..."

That's what it's talking about the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate (Dan. 9:27)—the temple. He goes into the temple which is yet to be built, he says he is 'God' and any man claiming he is God in the temple of God has got to be the worst abomination ever.

"...(the one who reads, let him understand); 'Then let those who are in Judea flee into the mountains. Let the one *who is* on the housetop not come down to take anything out of his house; And let the one *who is* in the field not go back to take his garments'" (vs 15-18). This is an urgent time. It's talking to those in Judea.

Verse 19: "But woe to those *women* who are expecting a child, and to those who are nursing infants in those days! And pray that your flight be not in *the* winter, nor on *the* Sabbath; **for then shall**

**there be great tribulation...**" (vs 19-21). **When** shall the Great Tribulation be? **When** 'the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stands in the Holy place,' **then** shall the Great Tribulation start! Not until then.

That fulfills the rest of this prophecy in Dan. 9 and hence it covers the first coming of Christ down through the 62-weeks, and the second coming of Christ, but you have a space in between. You have a space of 111 years between the ending of the first 7-weeks and beginning of the 62-weeks. At the end of the 62-weeks when Christ is crucified and dies, then you have from that time until the last 7 years at the end, a gap. There again, it shows and demonstrates how 'line upon line; here a little, there a little' and put it all together.

I know that I went through this a little quickly, but we have so many other sermons that cover that time period in those prophecies. If you go through them that will help you understand the rest of the prophecy here in Dan. 9.

These are the three prophetic periods of Daniel's 70-week prophecy in Dan. 9. I think this is the most accurate we can understand at this point. At least two of them are clearly determined. The first seven weeks and the 49-years of building Jerusalem, that's clearly determined, and the ending of the 62-weeks when 'the Messiah would be cut off and not for Himself,' having to be the crucifixion of Christ.

We know the end will be when *the beast* is cut off 'without hands' and thrown into the Lake of Fire, but we don't know exactly when the last seven years will start, except we're given a clue that he will 'confirm the covenant with many.' **When that covenant is made**, then he begins to deal 'deceitfully' and will come down into the Holy Land. We'll have to watch for that when we come down the line with things concerning the end-time events.

### COVENANT OF COVENANTS:

I want to cover something that I will call *the Covenant of Covenants*. We know that God is a *covenant God*. Anything that He does is done by covenant. Let's look at some things that indicate that between the two of Elohim—the One Who became the Father and One Who became the Son—that there were at least things written down and an oath affirmed to, which we can say constitutes a covenant between the One Who became the Father and the One Who became the Son.

Psa. 110 reveals that there are **two** of Elohim; in this case, two Jehovahs. That's why we have the booklets: *The Two Jehovahs of the Psalms*

and *The Two Jehovahs of the Pentateuch* both by Carl Franklin.

Psalms 110:1: “The LORD said unto my Lord...” Who was the Lord of David? *The One Who became Christ, the God of the Old Testament!*

“...‘**Sit at My right hand until I make Your enemies as Your footstool.**’” Here’s how the New Testament interprets that section:

1-Corinthians 15:20: “But now Christ has been raised from *the* dead; He has become the Firstfruit of those who have fallen asleep. For since by man *came* death, by Man also *came the* resurrection of *the* dead. For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ *the* Firstfruit; then, those who are Christ’s at His coming. Afterwards the end *comes*, when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to Him Who is God and Father, when He shall have put an end to all rule and all authority and power. For it is ordained that He reign until He has put all enemies under His feet.... [we know that’s not fulfilled, yet] ...*The* last enemy *to be* destroyed *is* death. For He has put all things in subjection under His feet. But when it is said that all things have been put in subjection, *it is* clearly evident that *it does* not include Him... [the One Who gave the order] ...Who put all things in subjection under Him” (vs 20-27).

Psa. 110 has to reveal the Father—the One of Elohim Who became the Father:

Psalms 110:1: “The LORD said unto my Lord...[the One of Elohim Who became the Son] ...‘Sit at My right hand... [after His resurrection] ...until I make Your enemies as Your footstool.’”

Verse 4: “The LORD has sworn and will not repent, ‘You are a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek.’” When God swears, that is an oath, an affirmation; that becomes *a covenant*.

Remember what we went through with Abraham (Gen. 22), where the Lord swore by Himself. Here He is appointing the One Who was Christ to become High Priest after the order of Melchizedek {note sermon series on *Hebrews*}.

Psa. 16 is another part of *the covenant*. Since very prophecy concerning Christ was written down and fulfilled, were not those writings part of the covenant that was given to Israel? *Yes!* And then, also, through the Prophets and then part of the covenant the fulfillment was in the New Testament. Let’s look at this Psa. and see how this applies:

Psalms 16:7: “I will bless the LORD Who has given me counsel; my heart also instructs me in the nights. I have set the LORD always before me....

[which Christ did, *always!*] ...Because He is at my right hand, I shall not be moved. Therefore, My heart is glad, and My glory rejoices; My flesh also shall rest in safety, for **You will not abandon My soul to the grave; neither will You allow Your Holy One to see corruption**” (vs 7-10).

Let’s see where the very first preaching of the Apostle Peter showed that that was fulfilled. It is that God promised Christ that He would not leave His soul in the grave, that He would not see corruption. Then Peter makes this very clear that this has nothing to do with King David, but it has to do with Christ.

Acts 2:25: “For David speaks concerning Him, ‘I foresaw the Lord before Me continually; for He is at My right hand, so that I may not be moved. Therefore, My heart rejoiced and My tongue was glad; moreover,, My flesh also shall rest in hope; for You will not leave My soul in *the* grave, nor will You allow Your Holy One to see corruption. You did make Me to know *the* ways of life; You will fill Me with joy with Your countenance.’ Men *and* brethren, let *me* speak to you freely concerning the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his tomb is with us to this day” (vs 25-29).

Then Peter goes on to show that this had to do with Christ being resurrected from the dead. Here is a promise that is made.

Now let’s look at something else that is really, I think, highly important, and then other things that indicate a covenant, an agreement between the One Who became the Father and the One Who became the Son.

Hebrews 10:5: “For this reason, when He comes into the world, He says, ‘Sacrifice and offering You did not desire, but You have prepared a body for Me.’” This is very interesting because when we come back to Psa. 40 where this is quoted from, the phrase ‘a body You have prepared Me,’ is not in the *KJV*, but it is in the Septuagint. I have a Septuagint, and I checked it out.

Paul is using the Septuagint in quoting it, because there is a significance to the point of having a ‘body prepared’:

1. a physical body
2. the Church, the Body of Christ, a spiritual body

Verse 6: “You did not delight in burnt offerings and *sacrifices* for sin. Then said I, ‘Lo, I come (*as* it is written of Me in *the* scroll of *the* book) to do Your will, O God’” (vs 6-7). Heb. 10 is a quote of a quote that’s written in the volume of a book or a scroll.

Psalm 40:6: “Sacrifice and offering You did not desire... [quoted in Heb. 10] ...My ears You have opened; burnt offering and sin offering You have not required. Then I said, ‘Lo, I come; in the scroll of the book it is written of Me; I delight to do Your will, O My God; and Your Law is within My heart’” (vs 6-8).

Where is the volume of that book? *You don’t find it in any other book of the Bible!* You only find it in those two places:

1. Ps. 40
  2. Heb. 10
- Is there a *Book of Life* before God in heaven above? *Yes, there’s a Book of Life!*
  - Are our names written in the *Book of Life*, being in the New Covenant? *Yes, it is!*
  - Could there be a book or a scroll in which all of these things were written down between the One Who became the Father and the One Who became the Son?

Not that They had to have it written down for Their sake, because Their Word is true all the time, but written down so those who are resurrected will be able to see that, yes, it was written down at thus and such a point in time in the plan of God. Otherwise, we would find this volume of the book contained in some other book of the Bible—don’t you suppose?

I know that some people may take me to task on that, but I’m just posing a question. We’re going to see that there are several other things that indicate that there were quite a few things written down.

Could this be the New Testament book that it’s referring to? *In both cases it’s referring to a scroll!* I don’t know if it refers to the New Testament, that’s entirely possible. It says that it’s written in the scroll of a book. Apparently, if it’s an accurate statement, not only just a prophecy but also something that was written at a time in the past, that it’s written in a scroll. Could that be at God’s throne? That’s the question that I’m asking here, and looking at all of the things that indicate that is probably so.

Psalm 2:1: “Why do the nations rage and the people plot in vain? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together against the LORD and against His Christ, saying” (vs 1-2). Again, we’re talking about two.

Verse 3: “Let us break Their bands asunder and cast away Their cords from us.” I believe that this is a prophecy of the coming great apostasy, the occult apostasy that is now sweeping the world, cutting everything off from God.

Verse 4: “He who sits in the heavens laughs; the LORD scoffs at them. Then He shall speak to them in His wrath, and in His fury He terrifies them. ‘Yea, I have set My king upon Zion, My Holy mountain. ‘I will declare the decree... [What is the decree? Where is the decree?] ...of the LORD. He has said to Me, **“You are My Son; this day I have begotten You.”**’” (vs 4-7). When was it that Jesus was begotten?

(go to the next track)

There was only one point in history when Jesus was begotten. That was when the angel Gabriel came to Mary and said that she would conceive through the power of the Holy Spirit. When she was begotten by the power of the Holy Spirit, that’s when the One of Elohim became the Son. He was not the Son until that time. That’s when the other of Elohim became the Father. Let’s see where this is quoted:

Hebrews 1:1: “God Who spoke to the fathers at different times in the past and in many ways by the prophets, has spoken to us in these last days by *His* Son.” It shows what kind of Son He is.

Verse 2: “Whom He has appointed heir of all things, by Whom also He made the ages; Who, being *the* brightness of *His* glory and *the* exact image of His person, and upholding all things by the word of His own power, when He had by Himself purged our sins, sat down at *the* right hand of the Majesty on high; having been made so much greater than *any of* the angels, inasmuch as He has inherited a name exceedingly superior to them. For to which of the angels did He ever say, **‘You are My Son; this day I have begotten You’?** And again, **‘I will be a Father to Him, and He will be a Son to Me’?**” (vs 2-5).

That’s what we find in Ps. 2. That’s when the One of Elohim became the Father and the One of Elohim became the Son.

Again, we find that there are two Whom are called *God* or *Elohim*, Psalm 45:6: “Your throne, O God, is forever and ever...” Christ would sit in the throne of God, and also at His right hand. We have those two things revealed to us in the New Testament.

“...a scepter of justice is the scepter of Your kingdom. You love righteousness and hate wickedness; therefore, **God, Your God...** [the Father and the Son] ...has anointed You with the oil of gladness above Your fellows” (vs 6-7). That is above all of those who would later come into the Church through that. Let’s see where this is quoted. This is part of the agreement that the One Who became the Son and the One Who became the Father had.

Hebrews 1:8: “But on the other hand, of the Son *He says*, ‘Your throne, O God, *is* into the ages of eternity; a scepter of righteousness *is* the scepter of Your kingdom. You loved righteousness and hated lawlessness; because of this, God, *even* Your God, **has anointed You with the oil of gladness above Your companions**” (vs 8-9). Who are the *fellows* (v 7) that He was anointed above?

Hebrews 2:9: “But we see Jesus, Who *was* made a little lower than *the* angels, crowned with glory and honor on account of suffering the death, in order that by *the* grace of God He Himself might taste death for everyone; because it was fitting for Him, for Whom all things *were created*, and by Whom all things *exist*, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the Author of their salvation perfect through sufferings. For both He Who is sanctifying and those who are sanctified *are* all of one; for which cause **He is not ashamed to call them brethren**” (vs 9-11).

Being anointed above the *fellows* is talking about those who will be in the first resurrection. That’s what it’s talking about.

Verse 12: Saying, ‘I will declare Your name to My brethren; in *the* midst of *the* Church I will sing praise to You.’ And again, ‘I will be trusting in Him.’ And again, ‘Behold, I and the children whom God has given Me’” (vs 12-13).

Now let’s look at some of the other things that give an indication of the agreement or the authority that Christ had from the Father.

John 10:17: “On account of this, the Father loves Me: because I lay down My life, that I may receive it back again. No one takes it from Me, but I lay it down of Myself. I have authority to lay it down and authority to receive it back again.... [From Whom did He get that authority?] ...**This commandment I received from My Father**” (vs 17-18).

He was the One Whom would become the Son, become flesh, Who would taste of death for every man. Again, it shows part of an agreement. “...**This commandment I received from My Father**.” So, there was this authority given.

Let’s see how this was an agreement. Some would say that maybe it wasn’t written down. Well, if it wasn’t written down, it certainly was Truth and it’s written down for us, at least, anyway.

That volume of a book—if it is a covenant of covenants between the One Who became the Son and the One Who became the Father, then this is giving us some of the details of the agreement that They had. The One Who would become the Son:

- *knew* that He would have to divest Himself of being God

- *knew* that He would have to come in the flesh
- *knew* that He would have to die

—and God the Father gave Him guarantees, and He also gave guarantees back to the Father.

John 5:19: “Therefore, Jesus answered and said to them, ‘Truly, truly I say to you, the Son has no power to do anything of Himself... [that was part of the agreement] ...but only what He sees the Father do. For whatever He does, these things the Son also does in the same manner. For the Father loves the Son, and shows Him everything that He Himself is doing. And He will show Him greater works than these, so that you may be filled with wonder’” (vs 19-20).

This shows some kind of agreement between the two. When we are baptized we enter into an agreement with God. It is a covenant, called the New Covenant, and it’s written in the pages of the Bible. It’s also written on the tablets of our heart and in heaven in the Book of Life. Our agreement is to have our sins forgiven, join in a covenant death with Christ through baptism that we may receive the Spirit of God and eternal life at the resurrection.

That’s just a short summary of the covenant. In that we agree—as it is in the prayer—*let Your will be done on earth as it is in heaven*. We are to follow the will of God. Christ had the same relationship with the Father.

Verse 30: “I have no power to do anything of Myself...” Having been God as a Spirit Being and then coming to be a human being, He understood that of Himself He could do nothing.

“...but as I hear... [from the Father] ...I judge; and My judgment is just because I do not seek My own will but the will of the Father Who sent Me” (v 30). That must have been part of the agreement that They had.

John 6:38: “For I did not come down from heaven to do My own will, but the will of Him Who sent Me. And this is the will of the Father Who sent Me: that *of* all whom He has given Me... [Heb. 2] ...I should not lose any, but should raise them up in the last day. And this is the will of Him Who sent Me: that everyone who sees the Son, and believes in Him, may have eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day” (vs 38-40).

Of this belief, because of our covenant relationship with God, is a profound *belief in God* that we seek to pattern our lives after—as Christ did in relationship to the Father—God the Father and Jesus Christ to *not do our will but to do the will of the Father!*

John 8:17: “‘And it is written in your law that the testimony of two men is true. I AM *One* Who bears witness of Myself, and the Father, Who sent Me bears witness of Me.’ Then they said to Him, ‘Where is Your Father?’ Jesus answered, ‘You know neither Me nor My Father. If you had known Me, you would also have known My Father.’ Jesus spoke these words in the treasury *while* teaching in the temple; but no one arrested Him because His time had not yet come. Then Jesus said to them again, ‘I am going away; and you shall seek Me, but you shall die in your sin. Where I am going, you are not able to come.’ Therefore, the Jews said, ‘Will He kill Himself? *Is* that *why* He says, “Where I am going, you are not able to come”?’ And He said to them, ‘You are from beneath; I am from above. You are of this world; I am not of this world. That is why I said to you that you shall die in your sins; for if you do not believe that I AM, you shall die in your sins’” (vs 17-24). Again, showing His whole purpose as to why He came.

Once again we shall see that He had commandment of the Father as to what He should do; John 12:44: “Then Jesus called out and said, ‘The one who believes in Me does not believe in Me, but in Him Who sent Me.’” That was the whole purpose of His coming, to open the way for the Father.

Verse 45: “And the one who sees Me sees Him Who sent Me. I have come *as* a light into the world so that everyone who believes in Me may not remain in darkness. But if anyone hears My words and does not believe, I do not judge him; for I did not come to judge the world, but to save the world. The one who rejects Me and does not receive My words has one who judges him; the word which I have spoken, that shall judge him in the last day. For **I have not spoken from Myself; but the Father, Who sent Me, gave Me commandment Himself, what I should say and what I should speak**” (vs 45-49).

There again we have evidence of an agreement between God the Father and Jesus Christ. It’s really quite profound when you go back and look at that one lode as ‘written in a scroll of a book concerning Me that I have come to do Your will O God.’ You can’t find that in any other book. It’s really something!

Let’s look at some other Scriptures that help to confirm all of this. Here’s something to really contemplate, brethren:

Ephesians 1:12: “That we might **be to the praise of His glory**, who first trusted in the Christ.” That just boggles the mind as to what a fantastic statement that is, and really shows you what kind of

work that God is doing in us, and the work of the New Covenant.

We can look around and see this old flesh wears out; yet, God is going to raise us with a spirit body and a spirit mind in glory and power through Jesus Christ.

Verse 13: “In Whom you also trusted after hearing the Word of the Truth, the Gospel of your salvation; in Whom also, after believing, you were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise, which is *the* earnest of our inheritance until *the* redemption of the purchased possession, **to the praise of His glory**” (vs 13-14).

Ephesians is really a wonderful and tremendously inspiring spiritual book.

Verse 15: “For this cause, I also, after hearing of the faith in the Lord Jesus that is among you, and the love toward all the saints, do not cease to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, **the Father of glory**...” (vs 15-17).

Here’s what God wants to give us, and we can receive part of it now. But just think what it’s going to be like at the resurrection.

**“...may give you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him”** (v 17). I know that what we’ve covered today kind of skirts to the outer edge of that, but it really shows the oneness of God the Father and Jesus Christ, how They work together in love and service and to bring the about for all those who would be called.

Verse 18: “*And* may the eyes of your mind be enlightened...” God’s way is completely opposite from the way of the world. The way of the world wants to keep you in darkness and away from the knowledge of God. But Christ’s way is to open your mind.

“...in order that you may comprehend what is the hope of His calling...” (v 18). That’s why it is so important brethren. We are going to have trials and difficulties in this world—all of us have them—but ***God delivers us out from*** all of our trials and troubles! Sometimes He doesn’t do it in a way that *we* think, but He still delivers us. “...the hope of His calling...”—keep that in mind.

“...and what *are* the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints” (v 18). When you stop and think, those in the first resurrection ***are going to be the crowning glory of God’s plan*** for all mankind! Those in the first resurrection will forever be in a close relationship with God the Father and Jesus Christ, of a greater relationship than those who come later.

Verse 19: “And what is the exceeding greatness of His power toward us who believe, according to the inner working of His mighty power, which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead...” (vs 19-20). *You will not leave My soul in hell, neither will You allow Me to see corruption!* The great power of God!

“...and set Him at His right hand in the heavenly places, far above every principality and authority and power and lordship, and every name that is named—not only in this age, but also in the age to come; for He has subordinated all things under His feet, and has given Him to be head over all things to the Church, which is His body—the fullness of Him Who fills all things in all” (vs 20-23). Again, showing God’s great plan toward us.

But notice how this is all keyed upon what God the Father and Jesus Christ agreed to before He became a human being.

Colossians 1:9: “For this cause we also, from the day that we heard of it, do not cease to pray for you and to ask that you may be filled with the knowledge of His will...” See how our lives are to be conformed to Christ, Who said, ‘I came not to do My own will, but the will of the Father Who sent Me.’ We are to be filled with the knowledge of His will:

“...in all wisdom and spiritual understanding... [For what purpose?]: ...that you may walk worthily of the Lord...” (vs 9-10).

- walking in the way of God
- walking in the good works that were ordained for us to walk in

“...unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work and growing in the knowledge of God; being strengthened with all power according to the might of His glory, unto all endurance and long-suffering with joy” (vs 10-11).

Brethren, that’s what we need to do. We need to ask God to grant us the mind of Christ. That as we come down in these days in the future—just ahead of us with all of these events to take place—that we have:

- that strength of mind, which comes from the Spirit of God
- the strength of the knowledge of God

When we have to really give a witness, and there’s going to come a time when we have to.

One man says, ‘I’m happy to hear someone say that Sunday-keeping was sin!’ You know that’s going to raise a lot of hackles and cause some difficulties with people. We need to be strengthened

like it says here.

Verse 12: “Giving thanks to the Father, Who has made us... [**He** has made us] ...qualified... [God the Father has done it] ...for the share of the inheritance of the saints in the Light; Who has personally rescued us from the power of darkness and has transferred us unto the kingdom of the Son of His love” (vs 12-13). He has given us that strength and power and His Spirit to overcome Satan the devil.

Verse 14: “In Whom we have redemption through His own blood, *even* the remission of sins.” That’s something, brethren! That why when we take the Passover, and how important that is, what a wonderful thing that God has provided that for us. That every year ***we can renew***:

- the covenant
- the hope
- the faith
- the dedication
- our resolve
- our going forward in serving God

Verse 15: Who is *the* image of the invisible God, *the* firstborn of all creation... [from the dead] ...because by Him were **all things** created, the things in heaven and the things on earth, the visible and the invisible, whether *they be* thrones, or lordships, or principalities, or powers: **all things were created by Him and for Him**” (vs 15-16). ***Have you ever thought:***

- that you were created ***for God’s purpose?***
- that God the Father Himself ***has called you to that purpose?***

I mean, it’s a wonderful and fantastic thing, brethren! This is what we need, with God’s Spirit:

- to inspire us
- to uplift us
- to strengthen us

—because we’re being assaulted at the end-time on everything from every side! Unless we have the resolve and the will of God in our mind—with the power and Spirit of Christ to do it—then we might be discouraged and overwhelmed by the world. We don’t want that at all!

Look at all of these prophecies of Christ that we looked at through this whole series, down to the smallest detail was prophesied—His thoughts and experiences:

- so that *we* could be called
- so that *we* could have our sins forgiven

- so that *we* can live in the grace of God
- so that *we* can be in the first resurrection with Christ

Verse 18: “And He is the Head of the Body, the Church; Who is *the* Beginning, *the* Firstborn from among the dead, so that in all things He Himself might hold the preeminence. For it pleased *the Father*... Is this part of the agreement?] ...that in Him all the fullness should dwell; and, having made peace through the blood of His cross, by Him to reconcile all things to Himself...” (vs 18-20).

God is going to fulfill His great plan. Nothing that Satan the devil can do, nothing that man can do can change that. Nothing that anyone could conceive to come against God is going to work or prosper. It may for a time, as evil prospers for a time. ‘There is pleasure in sin for a season’; but God will never be mocked, and His will is going to be done. “...through the blood of His cross, by Him to reconcile all things to Himself...”—*everything!*

“...by Him, whether the things on the earth, or the things in heaven” (v 20). God is going to straighten out the whole universe.

Brethren, just to understand that we’re going to have a part in that is magnificent. That is great! That is something that we all need to grasp and keep as a Holy passion burning in our heart and mind in everything that we do.

Verse 26: “*Even* the mystery that has been hidden from ages and from generations, but has now been revealed to His saints.”

- *God has revealed* it to you!
- *God has given* His Word to you!
- *God has given* His Spirit to you!
- *God has opened* your mind to understand His Word!

Verse 27: “To whom God did will to make known what *are* the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; **which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.**” Isn’t that something, brethren? That is the will of God! That’s the covenant that was between God the Father and Jesus Christ!

Colossians 2:1: “Now, I want you to understand what great concern I have for you, and *for* those in Laodicea, and as many as have not seen my face in *the* flesh; that their hearts may be encouraged, **being knit together**...” (vs 1-2). Isn’t that something? That’s the way we need to be as brethren:

- loving each other
- loving God

- serving each other
- praying for each other
- helping each other

There was a man being persecuted by the Catholics for teaching the truth about the Reformation in his history class.

“...knit together in love unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, unto *the* knowledge of the mystery of God, and of *the* Father, and of Christ; in Whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. Now, this I say so that no one may deceive you by persuasive speech” (vs 2-3).

Satan is going to be right there to try and beguile! We are living in a time when Satan’s power is going to be manifested in no uncertain terms.

Verse 6: “Therefore, as you have received Christ Jesus the Lord, be walking in Him; being rooted and built up in Him, and being confirmed in the faith, exactly as you were taught... [from the Word of God] ...abounding in it with thanksgiving. Be on guard so that no one takes you captive through philosophy and vain deceit...” (vs 6-8).

Philip. 2 sums up all the prophecies of Christ in the Old Testament and the fulfillment of them in the New Testament. We’ve gone over this many times, but I tell you what, in this day and age that we live in when love is scarce and lust is plentiful, where kindness is rare and hatefulness and murderousness is on every hand, we need to have the inspiration that comes from God.

Philippians 2:1: “Now then, if *there be* any encouragement in Christ, if any **comfort of love**...”

- we need to be comforted
- we need to know that God loves us
- we need to know that Christ loves us

*and that we love both of Them and that we love each other!* That is the “...comfort of love...” that we will have. That’s the only comfort you’re going to have in this world. I’ve lived long enough to know that there’s no other comfort you’re going to have. ***It’s got to come from God! from His love!***

“...if any fellowship of *the* Spirit...” (v 1). We need that, the use of the Spirit of God in our lives.

“...if any *deep* inner affections and compassions... [the innermost feelings] ...fulfill my joy, that you be of the same mind, having the same love, being joined together in soul, minding the one thing” (vs 1-2)—the Kingdom of God!

Look at the state of the Church today,

because they don't have these things. I hope and pray that they can begin to come to some of these things.

Verse 3: "*Let nothing be done through contention or vainglory, but in humility, each esteeming the others above himself. Let each one look not only after his own things, but let each one also consider the things of others. **Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus***" (vs 3-5).

So, the series that we have done on the *Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament* and the heart and mind connection will sort of cross right here. "...**Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus**"—the very mind of God. That can happen with God's Spirit and God's Word and God's Truth. That's why we go through the trials of life that we go through, so that we can come to that.

Verse 6: "Who, although He existed in *the* form of God, did not consider it robbery to be equal with God, but emptied Himself..." (vs 6-7)—divested Himself from His Divinity.

- Can you imagine what an awesome thing that that must have been?
- Can you imagine the agreement that the One Who became the Father and the Son had?
  - ✓ to where the one of Elohim Who give up the glory, the power and existence as God to become a pinprick of life and be begotten in the womb of the virgin Mary?
  - ✓ hence to experience every facet of human life from begettal to death?

That is an awesome thing!

When we stop and think of what has been required of us to give up, what compared to that? Now you see the whole attitude of Laodiceanism becomes so absolutely just a stench in God's nose; that they treat God's way so lightly that they become lukewarm, rich and increased with goods and have need of nothing.

Look what God did, "...did not consider it robbery to be equal with God... [because He was existing as God] ...but emptied Himself... [as we was in the prophecies He had no comeliness or beauty that anyone would desire] ...and was made in *the* likeness of men, and took the form of a servant... ['doulos'—slave] ...and being found in *the* manner of man, He humbled Himself, and became obedient unto death, even *the* death of the cross" (vs 7-8). So that ***His life and death could pay for the sins of all humanity, because He was Creator!*** What a magnificent thing that is.

Verse 9: "Therefore, God has also highly exalted Him and bestowed upon Him a name, which *is* above every name; that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow ..." (vs 9-10). Unto which of the angels did He said at anytime, 'You are My Son! This day have I begotten You'? (Heb. 1). *Not one!*

"...of *beings* in heaven and on earth and under the earth, and every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ *is* Lord to *the* glory of God *the* Father" (vs 9-11).

That's a tremendous thing to have all of these prophecies, see them all fulfilled in the New Testament, and come down in detail in every one of them. Paul leaves us with something that we need to continuously do:

Verse 12: "So then, my beloved, even as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, **work out your own salvation with fear and trembling**. For it is God Who works in you both **to will and to do** according to *His* good pleasure" (vs 12-13). That's what God wants us to do.

Brethren, I really learned a lot myself going through all the prophecies of Christ in the Old Testament. I think when we get into the book of Hebrews in the New Testament that we're going to learn a whole lot more there. ***I think we're going to realize how absolutely a powerful thing that God did in sending Christ to be the Son, and that we need to listen to Him!***

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) Daniel 9:23-27
- 2) Nehemiah 1:1-6
- 3) Nehemiah 2:1-8
- 4) Nehemiah 5:14
- 5) Daniel 9:25-27
- 6) Daniel 8:23-25
- 7) Daniel 11:22-24
- 8) Daniel 9:27
- 9) Matthew 24:14-15
- 10) Psalm 110:1
- 11) 1 Corinthians 15:20-27
- 12) Psalm 110:1, 4
- 13) Psalm 16:7-10
- 14) Acts 2:25-29
- 15) Hebrews 10:5-7
- 16) Psalm 40:6-8
- 17) Psalm 2:1-7
- 18) Hebrews 1:1-5
- 19) Psalm 45:6-7

- 20) Hebrews 1:8-9
- 21) Hebrews 2:9-11
- 22) John 10:17-18
- 23) John 5:19-20, 30
- 24) John 6:38:40
- 25) John 8:17-24
- 26) John 12:44-49
- 27) Ephesians 1:12-23
- 28) Colossians 1:9-16, 18-20, 26-27
- 29) Colossians 2:1-3, 6-8
- 30) Philippians 2:1-13

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Daniel 4:29-33
- Isaiah 53
- 2 Thessalonians
- Genesis 22

Also referenced:

Sermon Series:

- *Daniel/Revelation*
- *Hebrews*

Books:

- *Messianic Christology* by Arnold Fruchtenbaum
- *A Harmony of the Gospels (first edition)* by Fred R. Coulter
- *Josephus*

Booklets:

- *The Two Jehovahs of the Psalms* by Carl Franklin
- *The Two Jehovahs of the Pentateuch* by Carl Franklin

FRC:bo

Transcribed: 5-21-15

***Christian Biblical Church of God Offices:***

***United States***

Post Office Box 1442  
Hollister, California 95024-1442

***Canada***

Post Office Box 125  
Brockville, Ontario  
K6V 5V2 Canada

***Australia***

GPO 1574  
Sydney 2001  
Australia

***United Kingdom***

Post Office Box 6144  
Kings Langley WD4 4DY  
United Kingdom

***New Zealand***

Post Office Box 8217  
Cherrywood  
Tauranga 3145  
New Zealand

***Republic of South Africa***

Post Office Box 494  
Frankfort 9830  
Rep. of South Africa

***Malaysia***

WDT 00009  
Semenyih,  
43507 Selangor, Malaysia

***La Verdad de Dios***

[www.laverdadedios.org](http://www.laverdadedios.org)  
Post Office Box 831241  
San Antonio, Texas 78283

[www.truthofgod.org](http://www.truthofgod.org)  
[www.churchathome.org](http://www.churchathome.org)  
[www.afaithfulversion.org](http://www.afaithfulversion.org)